

# Rebilius Crūsō

\$b Robinson Crusoe, in Latin; a book to lighten tedium to a learner

Daniel Defoe



# Rebilius Crūsō

\$b Robinson Crusoe, in Latin; a book to lighten tedium to a learner

Daniel Defoe



Rights for this book: [Public domain in the USA](#).

This edition is published by Project Gutenberg.

Originally [issued by Project Gutenberg](#) on 2023-04-05. To support the work of Project Gutenberg, visit their [Donation Page](#).

This free ebook has been produced by [GITenberg](#), a program of the [Free Ebook Foundation](#). If you have corrections or improvements to make to this ebook, or you want to use the source files for this ebook, visit [the book's github repository](#). You can support the work of the Free Ebook Foundation at their [Contributors Page](#).

---

**The Project Gutenberg eBook of Rebilus Cr&#363;s&#333; :  
Robinson Crusoe, in Latin; a book to lighten tedium to a  
learner**

This ebook is for the use of anyone anywhere in the United States and most other parts of the world at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this ebook or online at [www.gutenberg.org](http://www.gutenberg.org). If you are not located in the United States, you'll have to check the laws of the country where you are located before using this eBook.

Title: Rebilus Cr&#363;s&#333; : Robinson Crusoe, in Latin; a book to lighten tedium to a learner  
Robinson Crusoe, in Latin; a book to lighten tedium to a learner

Author: Daniel Defoe  
Translator: Francis William Newman  
Editor: Daniel Defoe

Release date: April 5, 2023 [eBook #70468]  
Most recently updated: May 24, 2023

Language: Latin

Credits: Original version (50732) produced by Mark C. Orton and the Online Distributed Proofreading Team at <http://www.pgdp.net> (This book was produced from scanned images of public domain material from the Google Books project.). Spelling upgrade by Aurélianus Agricola.

\*\*\* START OF THE PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK REBILIUS  
CR&#363;S&#333; : ROBINSON CRUSOE, IN LATIN; A BOOK TO  
LIGHTEN TEDIUM TO A LEARNER \*\*\*

Note: this eBook differs notably from the original printed version and the first eBook version published on the Gutenberg Project.

This “upgrade” is intended to be faithful to the original purpose of the book: “to lighten tedium to a learner”, but answering to the modern needs.

Please check the [edition notes](#).

# REBILIUS CRŪSŌ:

ROBINSON CRUSOE, IN LATIN;  
A BOOK TO LIGHTEN TEDIUM  
TO A LEARNER.

BY  
FRANCIS WILLIAM NEWMAN,  
EMERITUS PROFESSOR OF LATIN IN UNIVERSITY COLLEGE, LONDON;  
HONORARY FELLOW OF WORCESTER COLLEGE, OXFORD.

LONDON:  
TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.  
M.DCCC.LXXXIV.

NOTTINGHAM:  
PRINTED BY STEVENSON, BAILEY, AND SMITH,  
LISTER GATE.

---

## PREFACE.

This book was composed when the writer was a Professor of Latin, as part of a larger scheme. He has long been convinced that the mode of teaching Latin has become less and less effective in proportion as it has been made more and more scientific. The effort has been general to confine the pupil to the most elaborate styles and the most approved classics, and the exercise of memory has been superseded by minute accuracy in the study of very limited pieces. In the natural mode we have enormous endless repetition and much learning of the names of things. We begin with short sentences and a very limited number of verbs; and we learn with the least possible number of *rules*. If we could talk in Latin, that would be of all best; but as we cannot get exercise in talking it for practical needs, no teacher can hope to gain adequate readiness and facility: or if a few might, yet this could not be counted on in any general system. It has long been my conviction that we ought to seek to learn a language *first*, and study its characteristic literature *afterward*. Greek and Latin literature plunge us into numerous difficulties all at once, inasmuch as their politics, their history, their geography and their religion are all strange to the young student. To take difficulties one by one is obvious wisdom; and with a view to this I elaborately maintained in an article of the *Museum* (No. iv., Jan., 1862, Edinburgh) that we ought to teach by *modern* Latin. As parts of such a system I have executed and published a Latin “Hiawatha,” and Latin Verse Translations of many small pieces of English poetry. If I could write Latin conversations *that would interest learners*, I should gladly have undertaken this: but when I tried, I could not invent matter that seemed interesting enough. This indeed is my objection to Erasmus’s “Colloquies,” which also are not easy enough in idiom to satisfy me. This “Robinson Crusoe” I thought I could make very interesting, and it includes a far greater variety of vocabulary than can be obtained from any of our received classics of the same length. I hope also the style is easy.

I surely need not apologize for taking only the general idea from Defoe. His tale is far too diffuse, too full of moralizing and with too little variety. He was very ignorant of the Botany and Zoology of the tropics, and when his tale is faithfully abridged, its impossibilities become too glaring. The Arabic “Robinson Crusoe” published by the Church Missionary Society cuts down Defoe’s story unmercifully.

I am indebted to my former colleague, the late Professor T. Hewitt Key, for the translation of Robinson into the name Rebilius. He also approved of Ignipulta for *a gun*, not as strictly grammatical, but as good enough to pass with Latins who were familiar with the word Catapulta. From him also I adopted Cannones, for *cannons*, and Pistola *a pistol*. The word Canna, a cane (or hollow tube) seems to be the root of Cañon, a *tube* or *cannon*, in Spanish, whence the American cañon for a tunnel, or larger tube.

After I had executed my own Rebilius (finally completed in 1861), I learned that a Frenchman, Goffaux, had published a “Robinson Crusoe” in Latin and French. On discovering this, I stopped the printing which I had begun, and after some delay succeeded in getting the book. But on perusing it I found his principles of remodelling the tale to be fundamentally the opposite of mine, concerning which I need not enlarge. I like his Latin, yet do not think his book supersedes mine. But if teachers can practically use his with advantage, I shall be well satisfied.

I wish here to renew my protest, that no accuracy of reading small portions of Latin will ever be so effective as extensive reading; and to make extensive reading possible to the many, the style ought to be very easy and the matter attractive. To enable us to talk, we ought to have a vocabulary that includes all familiar objects,—which the Classics of our schools cannot give us. Terence, though somewhat too difficult, would have great excellencies for the learner; but the substance of his plays is low, and eminently unedifying.

In the near future, *some* universal tongue will be sought for by the educated. If Latin be still learned in England, France, Italy, Germany, Hungary, Spain, this is still, as three centuries ago, the best for all Christendom. But perhaps even Latin will be beaten out of the schools.

It may be well to remark, that inasmuch as the grave accent has been very widely used in school books as indicative of *an adverb*, I adopt the mark in



this sense; and think it no objection to say that the Latins never so used it. Neither had they our stops. We do not pretend to follow their writing in detail. We usefully distinguish the vowels u i from the consonants v j; they did not. What should we gain, by writing the Iliad as its author wrote it? So too, I think it well occasionally to add long or short marks, as ēgēre ěgēre ēģere, vēnēre vĕnĕre, lătēre lătĕre lātere, to obviate ambiguity. Nay I write fluctûs for gen. sing., fluctūs for plural, but fluctus for nomin. sing. When *et* means *both* or *even*, I set an acute accent over it, not doubting that it then received some emphasis.

I also borrow from the marks used in Hebrew an *under*-parenthesis for coupling words that are in grammatical union. This mark is often very effective in explaining the structure of complicated Greek sentences.

---

# CONTENTS.

## CHAPTER I.

1 Robinson's parentage. 2 His first adventures. 3 His slavetrading voyage. 4 The shipwreck. 5 They take to the boat. 6 It is swamped. 7 His narrow escape. 8 His forlorn position. 9 He sleeps in a tree. 10 His mental struggles. 11 The dog and long boat. 12 He swims to the ship. 13 Its condition. The skiff. 14 He makes a raft. 15 He loads it, first with food; 16 next, with other necessities. 17 He tows off the raft by the skiff. 18 Favouring weather. 19 It is all but wrecked. 20 He sleeps again in a tree. 21 His first supper. 22 He fastens the raft; 23 and visits the long boat. 24 Second visit to the ship. 25 He plans a raft on water-tight empty boxes. 26 He carries off a few costly articles in the skiff; 27 and tows off whatever will float. 28 He lands his train at the nearest point; 29 and explores a natural harbour. 30 His dog-and-cat meat. 31 He ascertains that he is in an island. 32 Its character. 33 His precaution against panthers. 34 He puts his first raft in safety. 35 Third visit to the ship. 36 He brings away his new raft. 37 Second expedition the same day.

## CHAPTER II.

38 In future, he will write less minutely. 39 Weather changes. 40 He goes on foot to his harbor. 41 Its cliffs and caverns. 42 He bathes. 43 Sport and affection of the dog. 44 Robinson ascends to the table land. 45 Shoots a she-antelope and wounds a kid. 46,7 How he deals with his booty. 48 His mental agitations. 49 His ledger of things good and bad. 50 How he is soothed. 51 He conciliates dog and cat to the kid. 52 Thirteen days' work. 53 Why the ship had so much ammunition. 54 His search for certain articles. 55 He finds iron tools; 56 and baskets of dry beans; 57 and a portion of the plaid dresses. 58 He heightens his skiff. 59 His device for the

long boat. 60 He saves it into his harbor. 61 Last visit to the ship. 62 His raft is wrecked. 63 The ship vanishes.

### CHAPTER III.

64 His state of feeling. 65 His affection to tame animals. 66 His cooking of the beans. 67 Recovery of articles from his wrecked raft. 68 Details concerning the caverns. 69 Smoothness of their floor. 70 Solidity of their roofs. 71 Their screen of cactuses. 72 His bedroom and larder. 73 His manifold embarrassments. 74 He discovers a pure rill at hand; 75 and a natural dock for the boat. 76 He hedges in a spot in the valley. 77 He transports certain things to the caverns. 78 Numerous gay-hued birds. 79 Abundant vegetation. 80 Kindling materials. 81 Tropical products. 82 The creek ends in a land stream. 83 Natural fruit gardens. 84 He clings to the seaside. 86 He recovers the computation of time, and resumes his nautical mathematics. 87 How he had learned. 88 His register of lunar months.

### CHAPTER IV.

89 How he had learned carpentry. 90 He makes a little sledge. 91 He arranges his caverns. 92 His fear of wild beasts. 93 He adapts the ship ladder to a new use. 94 Digs a hole under his window. 95 He now feels safe. 96 On mining. 97 On his familiarity with gunpowder. 98 Removes to the caverns. 99 His encounter with a female antelope. 100 His two new young ones. 101 Absence of men on the island. 102 He amasses fodder and improves two cliff paths. 103 He discovers a palm grove eastward; 104 and a forest glen aloft to N.W. 105 How he brings down fuel and timber. 106 Climate of his island. 107 He rows round to the palm grove. 108 He cuts a young tree for boat oars.

### CHAPTER V.

109 He arranges his armory. 110 His other apartments. 111 His laundry operations. 112 Treatment of his skin and hair. 113 Distress from cold. 114 His leathern tippet. 115 His mat for the back. 116 Defence for head and cheeks in heat. 117 He shapes his new oars. 118 Exercises his boat in harbor. 119 From his skiff he sees a lofty mountain. 120 How he cooks waterfowl. 121 How he gets tame pigeons. 122 His toil in carrying. 123 His

spirits suddenly fail. 124 His religious agitation. 125 His tackle to catch a rabbit. 126 He catches two. 126\* He plaits new shoes.

## CHAPTER VI.

127 He explores the high mountain. 128 Panorama from the summit. 129 The mainland is on the south. 130 He discovers vine plants, and brings home citrons and lemons half-ripe. 131 He returns by an easy and natural road. 132 Joy makes him liberal. 133 Threefold character of the island. 134,5 He explores the hill west of the creek. 136 He catches a parrot. 137 He makes a rabbit-hutch. 138 He reads of elephant catching. 139 He plans to catch a fully-grown antelope alive. 140-2 The battle and victory. 143 He catches a female alive, and two kids. 144 Steady morning rains. North of the palm grove, he surveys eastward more of the coast; 145 with tortoises on wide sands. 146 Why he has no palms in his harbor. 147 Sport of the dog with the kids. 148 Their swiftness. 149 Description of the antelopes. 150 He trains them to the little sledge; his harness. 151 His dog learns to watch the flock. 152 He trains them to his whistle. 153 His schemes for food. 154 His fishing. 155 His weir-net. 156. He moralizes on his own character.

## CHAPTER VII.

157 His dressing of fish. 158 His unleavened bannocks. 159 His home garden. 160 His argumentation with himself. 161,2 How he is affected by his mother's birthday. 163 His funeral feast. 164 He finishes it in the glen. 165,6 The parrot's talk. 167-9 He brings home a tortoise. 170 The hull of the ship is cast up. 171 He ventures upon it within the reef. 172 An ague seizes him. 173 His dread of darkness; he drinks, first lemonade; 174 afterwards, Cinchona. 175 He gets oil and eggs from the tortoise. 176 He makes lampwicks. 177 The weather clears. 178 Birth of new kittens. 179 Other new broods. 180-2 Development of his religious sentiment. 183 The Popish Prayer-book. 184 The lessons which he now learnt.

## CHAPTER VIII.

185 He saws down the horns of the male antelope. 186 Use of the horns. 187 He makes a drill, 188 with a bow, 189 and guide; 190 also a larger sledge. 191 Deficiency of leather. 192 How he makes fine ropes. 193 His

small bridge. 194 His beach road. 195 New kids. 196 Contrivance for picking cocoa nuts. 197 Experiments on leaves, pith and bark. 198,9 Migration of his flock. 200 He sleeps in a hammock under the sky. 201 He makes the rush mat for his back. 202 His dress in the heat. 203 His preparation of a yam garden. 204 His siesta. 205 His raisins. 206 New products of the soil. 207 Turpentine or Resin. 208 Midday with the dog. 209-11 More fruits. 212 Unsuccessful expedition in the long boat. 213 He cannot return against the wind; 214 his distress. 215 The parrot comes to comfort him. 216 He trudges home, leaving the boat. 217 He fixes the latitude; 218 plants his kitchen garden. 219 Adds to his stores of food. 220 Insufficiency of his store-chests. 221 His first attempt at pottery. 222 He builds a furnace. 223 Makes huge square jars of coarse pottery. 224 He sets up a target for practice. 225 His preserving of fruit. 226 His recovery of glass beads.

## CHAPTER IX.

227 Two boats of black savages arrive. 228 He arms; 229 goes forth and views a cannibal feast. 230 A captive escapes. 231 Robinson shoots one pursuer dead and wounds another; 232 but saves the life of the latter. 233 Binds up his wound. 234 Ascertains that the two boats have departed. 235 He brings the fugitive to his caverns. 236 Returns to bury the dead; 237 and bring home the wounded man. 238 He tries the temper of the fugitive. 239 His deliberation and assumed majesty. 240 His careful treatment of the fugitive (Elapsus). 241 He astonishes both men with his pistols,—also Elapsus with telescope and watch. 242 He pours away nearly all the brandy and rum. 243 Elapsus makes good sandals for Robinson. 244 Robinson gives him a handsome plaid; 245 also cloaks to both. 246 He takes Elapsus to the scene of the murderous feast. 247 Elapsus reveals the virtues of trees and shrubs, 248 and talks of Indian poultry. 249,250 Various palms and their uses. 251 Thoughts about the long boat. 252 Convalescence of Secutor. 253 Elapsus devises a royal badge for Robinson. 254 Robinson accepts it; 255 and gives a secondary badge to Elapsus. 256 Description of the two men. 257 Elapsus is curious about work in iron. 258 Skill of both men in wattling and plaiting. 259 Skill of Secutor in cookery; his making of tea. 260 Why Robinson resolves to show no distrust. 261 He teaches both

the sword-exercise. 262 Armor used in it. 263 Secutor makes new arrows. 264 Robinson plans a cross-bow. 265 The men execute it.

## CHAPTER X.

266 Expedition to fetch the boat. 267 Mending of the sails. 268 It tacks well. 269 Elapsus pronounces it, *Not yet good*. 270 Secutor enlarges the kitchen garden. 271 Their sport in swimming. 272 Trial of soap-making. 273 Secutor as groom and gardener. 274 Reliefs for the men's toil. 275,6 Elapsus works bulwarks and flaps (outriggers) for the boat. 277 Robinson studies how to fulfil his demands of ironwork. 278 With Elapsus he makes a longer excursion on the hills. 279 Gets a view of the ridges and under cliff on the north-east. 280 The three work together at the smithy. 281 The parrot is killed by a falcon. How Elapsus comforts Robinson. 282 Diligent work during the rains. 283 Secutor's enmity to the rabbits. 284 Robinson's literary occupation. 285 His talk with them during their work. 286 They present him with a royal dress. 287 They try the new rig of the boat. 288 Petition of the two men concerning wives. 289 Robinson's anxieties. 290 His first question. 291 Their further suggestions. 292 His fresh objections. 293 He insists on first surveying the coast.

## CHAPTER XI.

294 Their new manufactures. 295 Robinson plays the hydrographer. 296 Elapsus finds the rice plant. 297 They survey the west coast. 298 Difficulty about currents. 299 Problem of the flock, solved by Elapsus. 300 They agree to hew new oars. 301 Robinson claims better missiles. 302 Their reply reproves him. 303 Their activity. 304 They carry home the fruit crop. 305,6 Some account of their own country. 307 Calculations of Elapsus. 308 Secutor's account of the late war. 309 Why neither tribe comes to the island. 310 Robinson promises to sail within four days. 311 Energy of Secutor. 312 Zoology of the mainland. 313 Robinson's final preparations. 314 Fate of the tame rabbits. 315 The three put to sea at evening; 316 and at dawn see land. 317 The two men resume their true names. 318 Reception by the populace. 319 The shooting match. 320 Sister of Gelavi; 321 also his bride. 322 Robinson consents to everything. 323 They are towed out with honor. 324 The return voyage. 325 They land at the Garden-port. 326 What of the flock?

## CHAPTER XII.

327 Nuptial preparations. 328 Indian Poultry. 329 Pranks of thieves. 330 Nuptial ceremonies. 331 Speech of Robinson. 332 Services of Upis and Calefus; 333 also of Pachus. Skill of Totopil in snares. 334 Functions of Robinson. 335 New Pottery and store closet. 336 Sago, Wax, Oil, Sugar. 337 Pachus and Calefus undertake rice. 338 Apartments. 339 New cares of Robinson. 340 Retrospect of his slavery. 341 His rest on Sunday. 342 His Sunday School. 343 His pupil teachers. 344 Materials for paper. 345 Religious talk with Gelavi. 346 Pachus makes needles. 347 New ideas of Gelavi. 348 Robinson seeks explanation. 349 Gelavi cannot satisfy him. 350 Pachus finds a stream of copper. 351 Three persons are driven on shore in a boat. 352 Policy of Robinson. 353 Perplexing comment of Gelavi. 354 The strangers depart. 355 Anxieties of Robinson. 356 New arrivals. 357 Robinson's suspicions. 358 of Gelavi and Fenis. 359 Fenis's defence. 360 Robinson recovers himself. 361 His promises to Cortops. 365 Supplementary conditions.

## CHAPTER XIII.

366 Robinson's zeal for his own language. 367 Gelavi opposes. 368,9 The discussion. 370 Robinson reluctantly yields. 371 He aids Gelavi in new alphabet. 372 He trains his own family to firearms. 373 Refuses to tell how to make gunpowder. 374 Pachus and Robinson sleep in hammocks. 375 Guns of distress. 376 Robinson sends to Cortops for rowers, 377 and boards the ship. 378 The rowers tow it off the sandbank. 379 Robinson guides them to the creek. 380 He promises a new mast, 381 and food. 382 The captain's story. 383 He asks the longitude, 384 and promises to carry Robinson to England. 385 Robinson orders food, 386 and shoots three wild antelopes, 387 and a pelican. 388 Cortops gives rice liberally. 389 The captain visits the caverns, 390 and accepts *one* dead antelope. 391 Gifts to Cortops and the rowers. 392 On the new mast. 393 Robinson and two men cut it. 394 Robinson visits Cortops by appointment. 395 Secret interview and compact. 396 It is revealed to Pachus and Gelavi. 397 Robinson abdicates in favor of Cortops. 398 Cortops adopts Gelavi as son and successor.

## CHAPTER XIV.

399 Dispatch of business. 400 Royal gifts of Robinson to Cortops. 401 Sudden loss of Robinson's skiff by Upis. 402 Yards are wanting to the mast. 403 Robinson undertakes to be ship-carpenter; 404 and buys many wares of the captain as presents to Cortops, Pachus and Calefus. 405 Great farewell on the Sunday; 406 and solemn advice to Gelavi. 407 Final arrangements in the ship. 408 Last gifts of Robinson. 409 The ship is wind-bound. 410 Robinson's story of himself. 411 How he escaped from the Moors to Brazil. 412 Received funds from England. 413 Became familiar with his employer's sons; 414 was invited to join in partnership. 415 Easy liberality of the Brazilians. 416 European considerations. 417 Robinson becomes a partner. 418 Fertility of the country. 419 Nature and management of his estates. 420 Occupation of three years. 421 His *ennui* in the fourth. 422 New overtures of his partner. 423-430 Robinson consents, after faint resistance. 431-3 His voyage and shipwreck. 434 The weather changes. 435 They are towed off. 436 The boats and Gelavi depart. 437 They fall in with a ship bound for England. 438 Robinson sends a letter by it. 439 He reaches Jamaica. 440 Arranges business at Brazil by letters—and without further events, regains his English home.



---

## ERRATA.

Transcriber's Note: the errata have been corrected as part of the process of producing this e-text.

Section	8,	line	6	— <i>for</i> rersus <i>read</i> rursus.
”	12,	”	14	— <i>for</i> protulentam <i>read</i> potulentam.
”	35,	”	15	— <i>for</i> facilime <i>read</i> facillime.
”	59,	”	12	— <i>for</i> hue <i>read</i> huc.
”	65,	”	12	— <i>for</i> compertum <i>read</i> compertam.
”	66,	”	6	— <i>for</i> panxillulum <i>read</i> pauxillulum.
”	70,	”	3	— <i>for</i> tălis <i>read</i> talīs.
”	91,	”	4	— <i>for</i> qualicumque <i>read</i> qualicunque.
”	103,	”	8	— <i>for</i> explorari <i>read</i> explorare.
”	216,	”	2	— <i>for</i> incedentem <i>read</i> incedens.
”	291,	”	4	— <i>for</i> Secutorum <i>read</i> Secutorem.

# ROBINSON CRUSOE. REBILIŪ CRŪSŌNIS ANNĀLĒS.

---

## CAPUT PRIMUM.

1. Nātus sum ego Eborācī, ex bonā familiā, sed peregrīnā: quippe pater meus Germānus fuit ē Brēmā, ubi appellābātur Kreutznaer. Cēterum per mercātūrā dīves factus, Eborācī cōnsēdit, unde recēpit in connūbium mātrem meam. Ex hujus agnātīs prænōmen mihi Rebilius, ex patre nōmen Kreutznaer inditum est. Sed vulgus hominum, facilī corruptelā, Crūsōnem mē Rebilium appellābat. Tertius eram fīlius familiae. Frāter maximus, tribūnus mīlitum, cum Hispānīs proeliō congressus, ad Dunquercam occubuit. Frāter proximus, sicut ego quoque postea, incertum quōmodo, ēvānuit. Mē quidem pater, dīligenter īnstitūtum, jūris lēgumque studiīs dēstinābat: sed, fātālī quōdam mōtū, nihil mihi arrīdēbat, nisi ut marī oberrārem.

2. Prīmā in juventā clam patrem ēvāsī nauta. Cursū mox fēlicī cum magistrō nāvis hūmānissimō ad Guineam Āfricae nāvigāvī. Alterō in cursū ā Maurīs pīrātīs captus sum, et per quattuor ferē annōs dūram servīvī servitūtem. Inde mīrāculō audāciae ēlāpsus, in Lūsitanā quādam nāve ad Brazīliam sum dēvectus, ubi colōnō cuidam trēs amplius annōs strēnuam operam nāvāvī, praefectus servōrum agrestium. Mox per hunc amīcōsque hujus adductus sum, ut ad Guineam nāvigārem, hominēs nigrītās conquīsītūrus, quōs ipsī inter sē per sua praedia servitūtis causā dīviderent. Equidem magnam lucrī partem eram dērīvātūrus.

3. Sed longē aliter ordināvit Deus, nē impūnē caecae cupiditātī obsequerer. Nempe ventīs abrepta nāvis Ōceanum trānsīre nequībat, sed longē ad Caurum dēvehitur, circā Orinocōnis ōstia, ut crēdēbāmus. Altera mox superveniēns procella magnō impetū nōs in Occidentem prōpulit, ubi, sī ē marī effugerēmus, per ferōs hominēs foret pereundum.

4. Gravī impendente perīculō, nocte intempestā et saeviente adhūc ventō, nauta quī erat in vigiliā “terram adesse” exclāmāvit; atque, antea quam cēterī experrēctī superne congregāmur, nāvis in arēnīs haeret. Statim cum strepitū tremendō corruunt mālī eōrumque armāmenta. Flūctūs magnā vī

forōs prōluēbant, neque ipsae nāvis compāgēs diū tolerātūrae vidēbantur. 5. Magister scapham dēmittī jubet. Dēmittitur: nec facile id quidem. Rēs, quae maximē ad vītā sunt necessāriae, raptim ingeruntur; tum nōs ipsī, tredecim virī, in eandem dēscendimus. Montōsum lītus inter sublūstrem cālīginem furvum appārēbat: eō rēmigāmus, sī quā forte in sinū terrae reductō tranquilliōre marī ūtāmur. Jam, violenter undante salō et circum nōs sē frangente, rēs nōn nauticae perītiae sed dīvīnae opis vidēbātur: quārē inter rēmigandum sē quisque Deō Suprēmō, pius impiusve, commendābat, salūte paene dēspērātā. 6. Ventus, ad terram prōpellēns, cursum scaphae accelerābat, terram faciēbat formīdolōsiōrem; metū autem maris, spē lītōris, ipsī nōsmet quasi in certissimum exitium dētrūdēbāmus. Tandem, vadōsiōre marī, flūctūs perniciōsius circumfringī et dējectārī scapha. Mox, ecce crista undae ingēns, quae nōs persequitur; et vix DEī effāmur nōmen, quum cūnctī sumus absorptī.

7. Quae sequēbantur, longa fortasse ēnārrātū, factū erant brevissima. Profundius sēnsī mē verbere flūctūs illīus dēprimī, sed, animā fortiter compressā, ad summās aquās ēmersī tandem. Alterō in flūctū spūmante implicātus atque violenter circumtortus, immēnsū anhelāns ēluctor; tum conversus, humerōs meōs succēdentī oppōnō cristae. Ea mē magnā vī cautem versus prōjēcīt, aquā exstantem: hanc ego amplexus, adhaereō, dum dēcurrit unda; tunc, priusquam novus superveniat flūctus, per vada exsiliēns scandō, iterumque amplector cautem; simul, aestū paulisper obruor. Ictus ejus mē asperē quassābat, sed extemplō āera animamque recēpī, et rūsus per vada supergredior. Citrā saxa undās longē minus ingentēs sēnsī, inter quās poteram natāre, aegrē profectō. Mox lītore ipsō prōjectus, uncīs pedibus in sabulōnem lapillōsque inculcātīs, prōnus dēcidō, ut nē mē flūctus retrahat. Ūnō post temporis mōmentō in terrā firmā astō. Conversus, videō praeter lītus cautium seriem, inter albicantēs aquās nigrārum; nihil aliud per tenebrās in marī dispiciō, neque scapham neque quemquam ē sodālibus.

8. Tamen haud valdē cālīginōsa erat nox. Ingentēs aliquot nūbēs, et plūrimae nūbēculae, sībilante ventō raptābantur: inter hās clārissima lūcēbant sīdera ē nigerrimō caelō. Respiciēns ad terram, collium dumtaxat cernō līnēamenta ac rūpiū. Tum vestīmenta raptim dētracta manibus contorqueō, et, quoad possum, aquam marīnam exprimō. Eadem rūsus induor, (quid aliud facerem?) et rūpem proximam per algās ēnīsus ascendō; frūstrā: nam nē inde quidem in marī quidquam discernī potest.

9. Attamen arboris fōrma super colle exstat. Hanc sequor, et, ut potissimum in cālīgine, arborem illam scandō et rāmōs amplexus interfūsusque mē repōnō. Vestīmentōrum in loculīs nihil habuī, praeter cultellum, tabācī aliquantum et tubulum fūmārium. Post brevem requiem assurgēns, virgam grandiusculam amputō, quā prōtegam mē aliquātenus. Aquā marīnā largius īnsorptā, tamen neque sitis neque famis aderat mihi levāmen. Sed, locō cibī, tabācī folium in ōs meum compōnō, implicātāque rāmīs virgā, membra mea ita dispōnō, ut nē dēcidam, sī somnō capiar. Vespertiliōnēs, et maximī illī quidem, strīdōribus ac volātū, somnum aliquamdiū discutunt.

10. Item quoad concitātō opus erat corpore, mēns mea tranquilla fuerat ac praesēns: nunc, quandō quiēscit corpus, maximē sē mēns agitāre coepit. Imprīmīs grātiās Deō optimō maximō sincērissimās profūdī, admīrāns praesertim, sī ego sōlus ex tantō naufragiō servor. Mox id ipsum crūdēlissimē mē pungit; etenim hīc sōlitārius, madidus, famēlicus, paene nūdus, pejus ēnecor quam in marī, nisi vērō ferī hominēs sīve bēstiae mē dēvorābunt. Sānē ego id temporis pius nōn eram, minimē religiōsus. Igitur tantā in calamitāte magnus mē aestus animī conquassābat, inter grātēs querēlāsque, cōnsilium ac dēspērātiōnem. Tandem agitātiōne victus profundō somnō conquiēvī, labōris ac maestitiae oblītus.

11. Māne expergīscor, multum recreātus, sed algēns; nec mīrum. Cēterum ibi maris temperiēs hūmānae cutis calōrem aequat: etiam nox ipsa tepet: porrō arboris illīus dēnsa folia fuerant mihi prō tegumentō, nē calor in apertum aethera effugeret. Sciūrī, psittacī, macacī sīve cercopithēcī circum garriēbant continenter. Ēvigilāns incipiō dēscendere: ecce autem canis noster ad rādīcēs arboris meae, quasi cūstōdiēns. Id mē tenerō quōdam ita affēcīt gaudiō, ut lacrimae oculīs oborīrentur. Ergō nōn sum prōrsus sōlitārius; ūnum saltem retineō amīcum! Hunc dēmulceō, plaudō armōs, paene amplector. Mox festīnanter dēambulāns, nāvem nostram ex adversō cōnspicor, longiusculē ultrā eās cautēs, ubi ipse prōjectus fuī. Sine dubiō aestus intumēscēns, ex arēnīs lēvātam, hūc dētrūsit. Jam autem paene sōpītō ventō, inānis tantum supererat undārum jactātiō. At ego in margine rūpis incēdēns, dēspectō circā lītus: mox, interjectīs vix mīlle passibus, scapham nostram discernō in arēnā, subter caeruleā quādam rūpe. Adīre eam voluī; sed quasi lingua quaedam maris interfūsa impediēbat; et quoniam famē urgēbar, in nāvem potius, sī possem, regrediendum cēnsuī.

12. Dēgressus rūpe, redeō praeter lītus: ibi pilleum nauticum videō, summō cum maerōre. Jam aliquantum recesserat aestus, atque, ut aestimābam, vix trecentī aquārum passūs ā nāve mē distinēbant. Exūtīs pallā brachiīsque, intrepidē mare ingressus sum, inter grallātōriās avēs, quae plūrimae aquā exurgēbant; et facile nāvem natandō assequor. Puppis ejus valdē ēlevāta est, dēpressa prōra; ex quā catēnae dēpendentēs aquam tangēbant. Hās ego prehēnsās ascendō, et supervādō lōricam tabulātōrum. Ō trīstem ruīnam, ubi mālī, vēla, fūnēs strāge conturbātissimā complicantur. Sed ego ad cellam penuāriam dēcurrō, ibique arreptō pāne nauticō (quī *bis coctus* appellātur) vēscor libenter. Mox, ex arcā meā ipsīus extractās, vestēs induor atque hōrologium meum resūmō. (Profectō resurgente aestū vesperī, ille meus in lītore vestītus natāns asportātus est.) Simul ut aquam pōtulentam inveniō, sinūs vestium pāne complēvī, ut quotiēs libēret, vēscerer: tum meditābar, quid facerem potissimum.

13. Illud mē angēbat, quod manifēstē, sī in nāve mānsissēmus, omnēs fuissēmus salvī. Super prōrā quidem saepius īnsultantēs undae plūrimās rēs corrūperant; sed altera pars, puppim versus, altē sublāta, sicca erat atque incolumis. Quippe, ut crēdō, quia in arēnā, nōn in cautibus haeserat, carīnae soliditās perdūrāvit. Quam plūrimās rēs jam cupiēbam asportāre; sed id erat difficile. Scapha major, ut dīxī, in lītore prōjecta erat longē. Illa quīndecim virōs facile portābat, et in magnīs Āfricae fluvīis ad invehendōs vēnālēs magnō ūsuī erat futūra. Alteram comportāverāmus longē minōrem, cymbam potius quam scapham dīxerim; quae duōs hominēs cum rēmige posset ad scapham dēvehere, sī quā jūxtā rīpās aquae forent breviorēs. Haec in nāve remānsit: dēmittere eam in mare erat in facilī; sed parum capiēbat, nec vidēbātur nimiō sub onere aestum lītoris tolerātūra. Postquam arcās ac dōlia multō cum suspīrātū aliquamdiū aspexī, contemplor mālōs, ac ratem compōnendam dēcernō.

14. Subitō exsultāns, ex fabrī nostrī repositōriō serrā dēreptā, mālōs dissecō, ut trabēs longitudine ferē parēs efficiam. Hās in mare prōvolvō, fūnibus quibusdam mālōrum suprā inhibītās. Ligna grandīōra cujuscumque generis colligō, ingerō, omnia fūniculīs dēligāta. Postea ipse sēminūdus, cum malleō et cōnfibulārum sacculō circum collum suspēnsō, dēgressus equitō super trabe. Undātiō maris jam dēminūta est: raptim ego ligna atque trabēs, vėlīs fūnibusque cōnfūsās, conjungō, dēstinō, dēpangō; vī meā maximā, quantumvīs rudī, ratis fundāmenta jaciēns. Redeō suprā; videō

quanta sint portanda onera, ratemque nōndum sufficere. Tum alia ligna plūrima et tabulās ex omnī parte nāvis conquīrō. Hās dissecāre ex suō locō, nīmī labōris erat atque temporis. Sed saepta animadvertō lignea, quae ad dīvidenda nigrītārū cubīlia comparāveram. Utrumque bīnīs hāmīs ē tergō, bīnīs spīcātīs clāvīs ē fundō, erat īnstrūctum; ānulīs laterī nāvis īnfīxīs, per quōs hāmī īnserī dēbēbant. Haec saepta plūrimam atque optimam mihi sufficiēbant māteriem. Quibus rēbus superadditīs, mōlem ratis et soliditātem multum adaugeō; tum fūnibus astringō cūncta. Longum id erat et sānē difficile: necnōn sōl mē admonēbat hōrārū: hōrologium substiterat. Dēnique postquam, graviter īnsultāns ratī, firmitātī ejus cōnfīdō, maximō cum dolōre sentiō, vix minimam partem eōrum, quae vellem, posse mē asportāre; jam autem dēligendum esse. 15. Ab operā paulisper requiēscō; vīnī ārdentis saccharīnī hauriō pōcillum, meditorque maestissimē. Ea quae ad vītā maximē sunt necessāria, dēcernō sūmere imprīmīs; tum, arma ad vītā dēfendendam. Quattuor nautārū arcās commodē vehī posse super ratī meā crēdebam. Totidem exināniō, et, per tollēnōnem<sup>[A]</sup> sūculīs īnstrūctum, dēmittō in ratem: hanc mox scālās versus trahō. Sacculōs impleō plūrēs bis coctō pāne, orȳzā, fabīs, mīliāriā atque hordeāceā farīnā; et facile in arcās dējiciō. Fabīs atque mīliō praesertim erāmus nigrītās cibātūrī, et sānē multum hujus cibī portābāmus, sed īnfra in alveō. Jam trēs cāseōs Batavicōs arripiō, caprīnae carnis siccātae massās quīnque, (quā carne vel maximē vēscēbāmur,) et frūmentī Eurōpaeī relliquiās quāsdam, quod ad gallīnās alendās convēxerāmus. Gallīnae vī procellārū perierant omnēs. Cēterum trīticum fuit id, cum hordeō: postea invēnī corruptum esse per sōricēs.

16. Dein latice ārdentī anquīsītō, vīnī palmāris congiōs ferē sex, cum plūrimīs dēlicātiōrū pōtuum lagēnīs, seorsum conclūsī. Hae lagēnae partim magistrī fuerant, partim meae ipsīus. Lacernam meam et lectī opertōrium corripiō, porrō serram, secūrim, malleum clāvōsque: sed haec in cymbā dēstinō portanda. Plūrēs fuisse in nāve nitrātī pulveris cadōs majōrēs sciēbam; sed ubinam artillātor noster eōs habuisset conditōs, eram nescius. Tandem multum anquīsītōs duo invēnī siccōs sānōsque, tertium aquā marīnā corruptum. Cistās trēs, hōc pulvere complētās, cūrātissimē intrā arcam super ratī ita conclūdō, ut, sī flūctus alluat, minimō sit dētrīmentō. Jam dē igne fovendō subit cūra. Coquī nostrī recēnseō supellectilem. Inde dēripiō foculum cum forcipe, batillō et rutābulō, crāticulam ferream, ahēnum, ollamque coculam. Satis oneris jam vidēbar imposuisse. 17. Cymbam

prōtinus per eāsdem sūculās marī committō; id quod difficillimum fuisset, nisi requiēssent undae. Hūc impōnō ignipultam aucupāriam optimam, pār pistolārum cum balteō, mulctram stanneam, igniāria, sīnum ligneum, pōculum ex albō plumbō, item corneum; cum vestibus ac fabrīlī supellectile, quam nōmināvī. Addō pilulārum plumbeārum sacculum ac gladiōs duo. Ūnus hōrum falcātus erat Maurūsiī meī dominī gladius. Sōlem videō dēclīnāre; itaque properē fūnem tractōrium ratī adjungō, fūniculōs plūrēs in cymbam prōjiciō, jamque dēscendō cum rēmīs, ratem ad lītus tractūrus.

18. Tria mē cōfirmābant,—mare tranquillum; aestus placidē allābēns; aurae quoque, quantum erat, terram versus spīrāns. Parvam ancoram in cymbā portābam. Jam rēmigō, atque contus animum subit. Redeō, efferō contum: dēmum lītus petō, sed dīrēctam viam cautēs prohibēbant. Avēs multae in ratem cōnsēdērunt, ut piscārentur commodē. Hās aegrē abigō. Mox sēnsī mē praetervehī, ipsō marī clam trahente: inde spērābam posse mē in fluvīī alicujus ōstium dēportārī, ubi bona mea tūtius expōnerem. Id quod ēvenit: nam rūpēs mox subeō, ubi in convallem sinus maris intrat. 19. Sed dum rēmīs, quantum possum, medium in flūmen cymbam dīrigō, paene alterō naufragiō cōnflīctor, rate vadō illīsā. Dēclīvī prōtinus ratī dēlābēbantur ejus onera, nisi properē succurrissem. Circumāctā cymbā, ligna aliquot dē rate in interstitia ejusdem intrūdō, quasi paxillīs ēnormibus sustinēns arcās. Hīc alligātus necessariō commoror, ānxius sānē animī, dōnec aestus īnsurgēns ratem allevāvit. Tum in parvum quendam sinum dēvertō, juxtā plānitiem, cui mare dēbēbat superfundī. Eō mox dēlātus metuēbam ancoram dējicere, nē tanta mōlēs fūnem abrumperet, nisi aquās stāgnāre intellegerem. Tandem recēdēns aestus in terrā firmā relinquit et cymbam et ratem.

20. Onera mea expōnere inūtile erat, nocte appropinquante. In arbore aliquā iterum dormīre dēcrēvī; itaque suffertā ignipultā armātus, item gladiō serrāque, per ulvās ūberrimās prōcēdō, anquīsītūrus idōneum cubīle. Nemus haud longē videō. Ibi dēlectā majōre quādam arbore, curvīs trānsversisque rāmīs, gradūs prō scālīs in cortice serrā incīdō; tum scandēns cum serrā amputō rāmōrum quidquid sit obfutūrum, et cubandī faciō perīculum. Macacōs videō plūrēs in arboribus, sed parvōs mītēsque.

21. Redeuntī canis occurrit, lepusculum ōre ferēns, quem ante pedēs meōs prōjēcīt. Intellēxī eum magnam partem dēvorāsse; etenim plēnus

saturque appārēbat. Sānē ego dōnum ejus nōn contempsī, quamvīs laniātum. Accēpī; sed subit cūra, nē sōlō meō amīcō prīver, nisi sēdulō pāscam. Magnō erat corpore, multōque egēbat cibātū; dē quō incēpī meditārī.—Dulcem aquam juxtā cōspicor, in flūmen marīnum dēcurrentem. Mox frondibus foliisque siccīs igne factō, lepusculī reliquiās super vīvīs prūnīs ope gladii ac serrae torreō, gustātūque ejus quam maximē fruor. Prīmam illam in īnsulā sōlitariā cēnam cum voluptāte trīstitiāque mīrē commistā meminī. Jamque cālīgābat. Ego autem tabulam quandam reportātam clāvīs dēstināvī ad rāmōs arboris meae, ibique lacernā obvolūtus somnō mē dabam. Ignipultam inter rāmōs apposueram: canis jacēbat subtus. Pistolīs quoque succingor, nē sīmia aliqua major mē incessat.

22. Et profundē equidem dormīvī, dēfessus labōribus; tamen ante lūcem sum experrēctus: (etenim illā in regiōne aestātis ipsīus nox proximē ante dīlūculum tenebrās obtendit:) atque ego meditāns cōnsilia mea compōnō. Ut prīmum dīlūcēscit, dēscendō. Ligna aliquot exacuō secūrī; tum prō sublicīs in arēnam ita adigō, ut ratem, quamvīs crēscentibus aquīs, inhibeant. Nitrātī pulveris cistās lacernā prōtegō, sī forte pluāt. Serram,—malleum,—clāvōs,—tabulās duās, rōbustam tenuemque,—argillam mollem, cum vetere fūne prō stuppā,—in cymbam collocō. Aquam mulctrā haustam sūmō mēcum, item pōculum ac pānem. Lepusculī, quod restat, cum cane dīvidō, ipsōque in cymbam adsūptō flūmen ingredior, scapham nostram invīsūrus.

23. Plēnō maris aestū, tardius dēscendō flūmen; mox intrā cautēs lītus lēgō, nē quid undārum mē incommodet. Magis magisque admīror avium abundantiam, quā marīnārum, quā silvestrium. Inter cautēs ac lītus grallātōriae abundābant. Ad scapham tandem pertingō; perfrāctam inveniō, velut animō praecēperam; crēdideram posse mē dētrīmenta ejus resarcīre. Sed vīgintī passūs ā marī jacēbat, procellā aestūque illīus noctis longē ēvecta; neque summā meā vī potuit movērī. Porrō, rēmōs idōneōs neque habēbam, neque, sī habērem, adhibēre possem, onustā certē scaphā. Aeger animī hanc relinquō, rēmīgōque nāvem versus. Cōgitāns autem statuō mālum vēlumque scaphae anquīrere, sī forte posteā hōrum ūsus vēnerit.

24. Ad scālās nāvis accēdō. Hās natāns nōn potueram manū attingere: etenim puppis nimium erat ēlāta. Sed astāns in cymbā, facile eās apprehendō. Cane prīmum superpositō, alligātāque cymbā, ipse ascendī; mox dēsideō inops cōsiliī. Ōllam offendō frūctuum condītōrum: cum pāne vēscor, dum cōgitō. Videō alteram ratem nōn posse mē cōstruere; spatium



diēi nōn sufficere, sī trabēs ipsā ex nāve sint dissecandae; lōricam tabulātōrum discindere, labōriōsum fore, nec valdē ūtile. 25. Maurōrum memineram ratēs utribus suffultās. Utrēs nōn habēbam. Arcās aquae impenetrābilēs volēbam prō utribus adhibēre; sciēbam autem nostrās solidō esse rōbore et astrīctā fabricā. Ūnaquaeque hārum ligneō pessulō rudīque serā obdēbātur; cūncta comparī erant modulō. Diē superiōre, dissectō serrā pessulō, facile aperueram quattuor illās; īdem nunc faciō in cēterīs, atque exinānītārum explōrō commissūrās. Artissimae vidēbantur; id gaudeō: sed fūnibus properē in mare dēmīsī quattuor hārum, ut commissūrae aquā intumēscerent; meam ipsīus, quae optimē fabrēfacta est, pice ac stuppā circā operculum incēpī oblinere, perīculum faciēns, num aquam exclūdere possem. Postquam operuī, cuneōs tenuēs ligneōs juxtā pessulum īnferciēbam, quō astrīctissimē conclūderem. Hanc in mare dēmīsī, fundō sūrsum sustentātam; atque ibi religātam relīquī, ut operam meam aqua explōrāret.

26. Jam videō diem prōcēdere, metusque subitō mē incessit, nē quis thēsaurōs meōs ē rate compīlāret, nēve bēstia corrumperet cibum. Īnsula foret an continēns terra, culta an inculta, ferōcibus bēstiīs īnfēsta necne,— nōndum sciēbam. Ratis autem dīlētissima oculīs sōlīque exposita manet, dum ego novās hīc rēs conquīrō! Crēdēbam nōn posse mē illō ipsō diē novae ratis onus asportāre; satius esse, redīre quam citissimē. Illud succurrit: “Heri, quae ad vītā maximē erant necessāria, āvēxī; hodiē, quae pondere levissima sunt, nūndinātiōne pretiōsissima, āvehā in cymbā; ut *sī forte* nāvis aliqua mē servābit, nē prōrsus sim pecūniae inops.” Duo gladiōs pulchrōs ē caeruleō chalybe inveniō; hōs avidē sūmō. In sēcrētō magistrī scrīniō aureōs nummōs Hispānōrum (doblounōs vocant) certō sciēbam continērī; quōs ille comportābat, nē, ventōrum vī aliquō dēvectus, pecūniā ad reficiendam nāvem egēret. Dolābrā prōtinus forēs scrīniū perfringō: inveniō autem nōn aurī sōlum crumēnās, sed īnstrūmentum astrologicum, pretiōsum illud quidem, ac duo optima hōrologia; item furcillam mēnsālem et cochlear, utrumque ex argentō; mox duās acūs magnētīcās, utramque suā in capsulā: tertiam vīderam ipsum juxtā gubernāculum, propter ūsum gubernandī. In mēnsulā offendō supellectilem geōgraphicam ac scrīptōriam, cum librīs quattuor. Cūncta arripiō, et quasi vōtum Deō concipiō, numquam, quantum in mē est, cognātōs magistrī optimī quidquam lātūrōs damnī, *sī forte* in hominum gregem restituar.

27. Dum meōs ipsiūs perscrūtor loculōs, unde argentum, arculās optimās clāvēsque avēbam, illud “*sī forte*” animum aurēsque meās pertentat. Immō tōtum hunc diem quasi rhythmus quīdam “*sī forte*” tinnit in auribus, dum rēmigō, dum incēdō. Jam rēs pretiōsissimās in arculīs conclūseram, quum scaphae meminī armāmenta. Haec facile reperiō. Mālum ejus ad terram attrahendum dēcernō, pōne cymbam alligātum. Quamvis properāns, temperāre mihi nequīvī, quīn lārdī asportārem succīdiam, cum bulbōrum majōrum marsūpiō ac capide duōbusque cultrīs. Dein, quidquid vidēbam corbium, fiscōrum, riscōrum, quod natāre poterat, restibus cōstringō, et pōne trahō, in cymbā portāns mē ipsum ac canem cum novīs thēsaurīs. Ecce autem, dum in eō sum, ut nāvem relinquam, duae fēlēs cymbae īnsiliunt, quās quidem neque ego neque canis aspernātur.

28. In rēmigandō, vereor nē agmen meum, pōne tractum, vadō flūminis illīdātur; in lītus potius prōjicere volō. Dein locum putō exquīrendum, ubi ratis mea posterō diē tūtissimē appellat: nam sī arcae in fundō ratis aliquō afflīgerentur, maximum fore perīculum nē cūctae rēs disperīrent. Dīxī linguā quādam maris prīmō illō māne mē ā scaphā intersaeptum. Hanc videō ad dextram cautium, eōque dīrigō cursum. Corbēs, mālum scaphae, cētera, facile in lītus sūrsum trahō; dein sinum illum maris properō intrāre.

29. Circā quīngentōs passūs penetrābat terram, rūpe praecipitī undique circumclūsus. Ōstium angustius erat, quia aspera saxa utrimque exsurgēbant postium īnstar. Lītus intimum ē mollissimā ac plānissimā erat arēnā; id quod facile perspexī, quia nōndum altius pertinuerat aestus. Ultrā arēnam videō algās cactōsque. Hūc certum est ratem illam crās dēdūcere. Quae quum summā celeritāte lūstrāssem, contentīs bracchiīs domum rēmigō: nempe *domum īre*, erat, *ad opēs meās*. Intrā cautēs mare invēnī tunc quidem sānē tranquillum.

30. Ad coquendum prōtinus accingor, praesertim (sī crēdere possīs) propter canem; immō, propter fēlēs item; namque ad quidvis, quod posset mē amāre, mīrē allectābar. Quattuor intrā lapidēs ignem accendō. Trēs stūpitēs, īnfra arēnae īnfīxōs, suprā fūne colligō; inde suā catēnā suspendō ahēnum coculum. Aquam in capide apportātam īnfundō; addō fabās, farīnam hordeāceam, lārdī segmen cum bulbō. Māteriā ignī largius injectā, ignipultam arripiō pārōque collem ascendere quī haud longē aberat. Canem mēcum adsūmō, fēlēs crēdō propter fervōrem ignis nihil nocitūrās cibō. 31. Mille quīngentōs passūs ad summum aestimābam iter illud; sed quia propter

rīvulum quendam atque ūvidum solum circuīvī, longius erat aliquantō. Dēmum ēnīsus per praecipitia, mare undique circumfūsum cōnspicor, aliam nūllā ex regiōne terram, praeter scopulōs aliquot duāsque pusillās īnsulās novem ferē mīllia occīdentem versus. Ūnus in postīcō mōns mare exsuperābat; sed tamen eram in īnsulā. Hoc mē magnopere angēbat.

32. Magnā ex parte sterilior vidēbātur īnsula, saxōsīs collibus abundāns, nōn sine arboribus; quae quidem in cavīs locīs dēnsābantur. Nisi numerārem fēlem quandam feram, carnivorās nōn offenderam bēstiās; sed praeter macacōs ac sciūrōs in convalle, leporēs et exiguōs porcillōs vīderam; avēs autem nōtās ignōtāsque ubīque quam plūrimās. Ālitem majōrem, arborī īnsidentem, glandibus olōrīnīs trānsverberō rediēns. Plūma ejus rōstrumque accipitris erat, unguēs modicae, carō piscibus foetida. Tum vērō mēmet increpābam quod jaculandī suppetiās perderem. Ālitēs autem rapācēs, quamquam plūrimōs, nōn magnōs illōs vīderam. Porrō ferās hujus īnsulae cōram homine plērāsque intrepidās esse repperī. Ā collis jugō ingentēs prōspiciō arborēs, quās aestus in flūmine resurgēns dēbeat alluere. Hae suprā ratem erant, neque procul ab arbore in quā proximā nocte dormīveram. Subter hās statuō ratem attrahere, succēdente aestū. Sed properē reversus, ignem exstīnctum inveniō, cibum nōn male coctum. Fēlēs, valdē famēlicae, magnā vōce querēbantur. Hās et canem largiter pāscō; et mēcum statuō, plūrēs etiam mē fabās, sī possim, nāve extractūrum.

33. At ferae vīsiō fēlis mē commōverat aliquantum. Verēbar nē majōrēs ejusmodī bēstiae hīc dēgerent, ut pardus, ut panthēra, quae arborēs facile ēscendunt. Circumvallāre mē certus sum. Ūtēsilibus arreptīs fabrīlibus cum māteriā ac fūne, petō arborem meam; ubi, incīsūrīs secūrī impressīs, pālōs īnfīgō, brevēs tabulās suprā dēstinō, tum quattuor dēsuper pālīs contrā ictūs īfernōs corrōborō. Quippe intellēxī fēlem quamcumque ab ipsā stirpe arboris tamquam incurrere sūrsum; et sī quid praeruptē ēmineat, arcērī. Restim autem quasi in ānulōs duōs sīve āmenta complicō, quem rāmīs alligātum, ipse possimprehendere ascendēns. Tālī tum podiō arborem, ut poteram, praetexuī: postea cōfirmāvī, plēniōre adjūtus supellectile. 34. Jam videō noctem aestumque appropere. Sublicīs ēvulsīs, pōne cymbam trahō ratem, appōnōque sub arbore ingentī incolumem; ubi latēre posse crēdēns, sublicīs iterum dēpangō. Deonerātā cymbā, compōnō rēs omnēs accūrātē. Tum, crāstinīs cōsiliīs aestuāns, tamen somnō celeriter corripior, ālātīs blattīs atque vespertīlīōnibus contemptīs.

35. Ēvigilō ante dīlūculum. Dēproperō ad cymbam dētrūdōque in fluvium; canis quasi suō jūre īnsilit. Subter stēllīs rēmīgō, adversō aestū. In nāvem invādō, etiam ante sōlem ortum; sed dīlūcēscēbat. Īnspiciō arcam meam; optimē aquam exclūserat. Cēterās item ē marī subtractās stuppā ac pice pariter ac meam ipsīus conclūdō. Omnia fūnibus contentissimīs astringō. Mox quattuor sufficere videntur; immō sīc tūtius fore ad prīmum experīmentum. Hīs in mare dēlātīs, et firmissimē cōnstrictīs superpōnō dōlium pulveris nitrātī, alterum pānis, mox tōtum fabrī repositōrium. Adjungō sēriam oleī, ōllam picis, arma missilia aliquot, aliās rēs minōrēs. Vēla quotquot invēnī, quae supervacānea portābāmus, cum scaphae vēlō, collocāvī suprā; superque hīs rūrsus carbasum quendam pice liquidā oblitum. Tantum onus facillimē vidēbantur arcae tolerāre.

36. Postquam restibus omnia cōnsolidāvī, paulō ante merīdiem, strēnuō nīsū ratem ad lītus trahō, paene īnfimō in aestūs recessū. Sed inter postēs saxeōs in sinum illum prōcēdō, neque in flūmen adversum volō mē committere. Mare intrā mox quiētissimum inveniō, et quasi in stāgnō religō ratem. Maximē gāvīsus, prōjiciō mē sub rūpe et paulisper sub umbrā requiēscō: dein cibō recreātus, ad operam redeō. 37. Quidquid erat in rate, in algōsum siccae arēnae acervum expōnō; sed labōriōsē, propter humilēs aquās. Videō mare adhūc tranquillum; crās posse coorīrī procellās. Spēs et cupiditās, quamvīs lassō, dedit vīrēs. Cum carbasō illō (sī forte sit ūsuī) atque cūnctīs fūnibus retrahō ratem ad nāvem. Quīntam illam properē adjungō arcam, et aliquot rēs ponderōsās impōnō; inter quās hīc nōmināre libet molam ferrāmentīs acuendīs, glandium majōrum cadulōs duo: in cymbā autem meās vestēs, et pulveris nitrātī aliquantum. Cūncta dēportō intrā postēs marīnōs incolumbia paulō ante tenebrās. Valdē dēfessus inde redībam: sed aestus cymbam subvēxit sine meā vī. Vix poteram cēnāre; igitur pāstō cane fēlibusque, somnō mē commīsī.

---

## CAPUT (II.) SECUNDUM.

38. Trium diērum rēs gestās nārrāvī singillātim. Īmō in corde meō īnscrīptae sunt, quasi hesternae essent. In iīs quae sequuntur, saepius accidet, ut rem probē nōverim, diem meminerim parum; nec lēctōrī jūcundum foret, ut rēs, sī possem, diārīī mōre ēnārrārem. Dehinc, quae ex nāve īnsuper āvēxī, summātim potius memorābō. 39. Quārtō māne dormīvī post lūcem. Jejūnus, vēscor avidē: etenim in ahēnō cibus aliquot diērum mihi meisque restābat. Sed quasi nervīs succīsīs, languēbat animus fastīdiēbatque suōs successūs. “Cūr labōrō?” inquitēbam “cūr-ve juvat mē vīvere, sōlitārium, moribundum? Quid prōsunt nāvis spolia, nisi ut aliquot diēs vītā extraham?” Tum addidī clārā vōce: *Nisi forte! Nisi forte!* Mox intellegō ventum ā marī flāre, aestum violentius īnsurgere, in ōstiō periculōsum forsitan cymbae fore. Cymbulam autem illam majōris quam cūncta quae in nāve restābant aestimābam. 40. Tum sī ad nāvem ratem ē portū meō trāxissem—etenim illum maris sinum postibus mūnītum jam Portum Meum appellābam—quis spondēret, quīn naufragium ipsō in flūmine paterer rediēns? Nūbēs porrō volitāre animadvertī; imber nē caderet, melius tegī, quae exposita relīqueram in portū. Etenim cava plūra illā in rūpe cognōveram. Illūc igitur pedibus cōnfestim īre dēcernō. 41. Rūpēs ad laevam prīmō rubra erat, nisi ubi algā obtegerētur; ipsō in portū alba; ulterius praeceps ac caerula: omnis autem ē saxō (ut crēdidī) calcāriō. Portus cavīs locīs, immō cavernīs abundābat, quārum in aliquam possem sine magnō labōre eās rēs recondere, quās pluvia corrumperet potissimum. Per algās cactōsque ēnīsus, hūc reposuī lectum vestēsque omnēs, item pānem, ignipultās ac nitrātum pulverem, carbasō illō piceātō contēcta. Rēs fabrīlēs et cētera graviōra vēlīs obtēxī.

42. Jam corporis illuviēs mē vexat; nam per trēs labōriōsissimōs diēs ac duās noctēs iisdem in vestīmentīs illōtus mānseram. Discingor natātūrus. Plēnō ferē aestū quasi lacus maris clārissimus cōram redundābat. Cadēbat pluvia tenuis, sed inter nūbēs radiābat jubar; mox appārēbat arcus caelestis.

Mīrē ille vīsus stringit mulcetque animum meum. 43. Atquī canis in aquam mē īnsequitur et mēcum vult lūdere. Nostrātium canum ille fortasse Grāiō Hibernōrum canī simillimus erat, Molossō domesticō gracilior et vėlōcior, glabrō item corpore, ut calōribus nātō. Probē natābat, sed digitātus erat, nōn *palmipēs* (quod appellant); id est, digitīs nōn erat pellītīs; atque ego vėlōcitāte natandī facile eum superābam. Itaque hunc dum ēlūdō, mē recreō. Ut ex aquā ēgressus sum, is crūra pedēque meōs tam amanter lambit, atque tam gestit mē recuperāsse, ut nequīverim mē continēre. In effūsum flētum solvor, velut ōlim in pueritiā, sentiōque cor exonerārī. Vestēs mūtāvī: immundās in aquā marīnā sub majōribus lapillīs dēmergō: tum ēgredior, īnsulam explōrātūrus. 44. Scandō ē portū per ardua. Inde videō illum collem, quō antea ēnīsus sum, hōc ā latere ascēnsū facillimum. Culmen rūpium plānitiēs erat sīve campus calcārius, dēlicātīs vestītus herbīs. Hae recentī pluviā ita erant recreātae, ut nova veteribus admixta folia flōrum praetulerint speciem, ubi rubor vel purpura cum novō virōre contendēbant. Leporēs sīve cunīculī suīs ē latibulīs ēgredientēs audentius mē aspexēre, quōs nē īnsequerētur, aegrē repressī canem.

45. Mox in scopulōsa locō ēvādō, et caprōs discernō ferōs procul; *antilopās* potius dīxerim. Pōne saxa īnserpō, quamquam minimē fugācēs erant. Glandibus olōrīnīs tubum sufferciō; dein igne ēmissō occīdō capram vulnerōque haedum jūxtā. Canis intercurrēns haedum prehēnsā pelle attinet, dum assequor. Crūre vulnerātam posteriōre inveniō; poterat tamen incēdere. Mātre voluī reportāre ad flūmen vallemque meam; sed fateor, adhūc eram tam dēlicātus, ut nōluerim recentem vestītum sanguine commaculāre. Sūdāriō ē sinū vestis extractō, argillāque ūdā in vulnus compressā, cōnstrīnxī firmiter; tum grāmine sanguinem omnem abstersī. 46. Voluī eam in cervīcibus portāre; sed quandō cōnor, id vērō meās vīrēs exsuperat. Super glāreōsam humum aegerrimē cornibus eam trahō, in grāmine facilius. Haedī cornibus fūniculō circumdatō, hanc dūcō mēcum simul; id quod, dum ignipultam portō, paene nimium erat; igitur saepius cōnsēdī. Via autem et dēclīvis erat, nec longa, circā alterum jugī latus; itaque tandem pervēnī. 47. Prōtinus in ūdō linteō crūs haedī astringō; et, nē longus sim, tantā cūrā foveō pāscōque (nam grandiuscula erat) ut mānsuētissima ēvāserit. In arēnā, juxtā ratem prīmam, sub dēnsīs umbrīs, pēlvem excavō; in quam, aquā sēmīsalsā replētā, recondō capram, ut ōtīōsius carnī coquendae dem operam. Canem appropinquāre vetuī; pāscō autem liberāliter et hunc et fēlēs: avēs tamen metuō, nē carnis sint cupidae.

48. Dum strēnuē mē exercēbam, vix sentiēbam miseriās meās: sed simul ac lassitūdō abrumperet operam, nisi somnō corriperer, mēns coepit agitārī: id quod saepius mihi ēvēnit. Meās egomet cōgitātiōnēs nequībam tolerāre, et variīs quasi ventīs hūc illūc ferēbar. In dēspērātissimā conditiōne mē vidēbam, extrā nāvium Eurōpaeārum cursum. Frāctō animō, lūgēns, interdum lacrimāns, diffīsus Deō, dēcrēta ejus conquerēns; rūsus ipse mēmet objūrgābam, sōlābar, hortābar, cōfirmābam, maximē gāvīsus quod tot rēs ē nāve conguessissem. 49. Itaque per id tempus, quoniam apud nēminem potuī vicem miserārī meam, aperuī capsam scrīptōriam, ex quā chartam, calamōs, ātrāmentum, prōtulī, incipiōque angōrēs meōs argūmentandō effundere, quasi per sermōnem. Mox tālem altercātiōnem in tabulās (ut ita dīcam) *acceptī impēnsīque* referō, quās lēctōris oculīs nunc subicere libet.

#### MALA MEA.

1. In īnsulā sōlitāriā sum prōjectus.
2. Ego ūnus ē sodālibus ēnecor aegrimōniā.
3. Exsulō ē societāte hominum.
4. Vī bēstiārum sum plānē obnoxius.
5. Labōriōsissimē vīctum quotīdiānum quaerō.
6. Serviō hīc servitūtem perpetuam.
7. Nisi prius sōlitāriē moriar, ad sōlitāriam senectūtem reservor.

#### LEVAMENTA MALŌRUM.

1. At nōn es dēmersus, sīcut cēterī.
2. At tibi ūnī restat spēs aliqua effugiī.
3. At nōn servīs hominibus scelestīs.
4. At nōn in belluōsam Āfricam prōjectus.
5. At magnam tū habēs ex nāve opem.
6. At aliōs tū in servitūtem nōn redigis.
7. At nōn tua magis quam parentum senectūs erit sōlitāria.

50. Profectō ultima illa nimis mē pupugēre. Quae prō levāmentīs scrīpsī, vulnus animī recrūdēscere fēcērunt. “Peccāvī,” inquam: “meritam poenam tolerābō virīliter: *fortasse* ipsa poena aliquid tandem bonī afferet.” Tum cito sēdāta est omnis mea perturbātiō. Ego autem haec atque tālia reputāns, admīror, quanta sit vīs vel incertae obscuraeque religiōnis, sī modo rēctā intendātur viā. Illud *fortasse* et *sī forte* plūris est, quam quis putāverit; quia

saepius indicium est animī per tenebrās, lūcem versus, ēnītentis. Id autem ipsum est virtūs: nam sapientissimus quisque nostrum in suā tamen versatur cālīgine, semperque eluctatur plēniōrem versus lūcem. Itaque iterum ēvāsī strēnuus. 51. Tum canī fēlibusque haedum conciliāre studeō. Omnēs paxillīs dēpangō vīcīnīs; ūnīcuique suum largior cibātum; ūnumquemque suā vice dēmulseō. Ex cōnsuetūdine spērō familiāritatem, ex meā cāritāte cāritatem mūtuum. Postea ad portum cane comitante reversus, aliās explōrō cavernās, plūrēsque rēs melius ordinō. 52. Tredecim diēs in terrā dēgēbam, necdum nāvis ēvānuerat. Illam ūndeciēs (crēdō) ascendī. Quantumvīs coacervāveram, plūs tamen concupiscēbam; et dum nāvis cōnsistēbat, inter eam portumque meum ācerimum sustentō ratis commercium. Rēs aliquot, quās āvēxī, libet hīc memorāre: Incūdem artillātōris, quam aegerrimē āmōlītus sum; virgās vectēsque ferreōs; pēnsilem lectum cum lōdīcibus; supparum antīcum ē subsidiārīis: lacernās plūrēs: piscātōriam supellectilem novam atque amplam. Porrō ē rē jaculātōriā magnōs forcipēs follēsque, malleum rōbustissimum, pēlvēs ferreās ad plumbum liquefaciendum, batillum grande. Tum omnēs ignipultās, bonās malās, asportō; item alterum pār pistolārum. Dēmum fabrilem mēnsam, retināculō cochleātō īnstrūctam, multō cum labōre per tollēnōnem dēmittō, laetusque comperiō hanc per sē natāre. Inter minōrēs rēs memorō lībram cum lancibus ahēneīs, sīve trutinam oportet appellāre, quam in scrīniō magistrī offendī. Ille propter medicās, crēdō, ūsūs habēbat; nam magister nautīs prō medicō erat. Ego hanc, velut pecūniās, idcirco asservāvī, sīquandō prō nummīs valeret. Ingentem plumbī convolutī lāminam, quae nimia posset esse, secūrī malleōque discissam particulātīm asportāvī; etiam magnum pilulārum plumbeārum vim, plūrēs rudentēs, fūnēs, ferreōs hāmōs, clāvōs, pessulōs, cōnfībulās, ānulōs. Cannōnās suā ex sēde nōn eram dēturbātūrus. Postea magnum trītīcī dōlium laetus inveniō, sēriam optimī adōris, saccharī cadum majōrem, vīnī ārdentis amphorās trēs; porrō cultrōs furcillāsque mēnsālēs, grandem forficem, trēs novāculās, quattuor nautārum gladiōs sīve sīcās.

53. Nē forte mīrētur lēctor, quārē tantam bellicī terrōris vim in mercātōriā nāve vēxerīmus, nātūram illīus commerciī cūrātius dēmōnstrābō. Hominēs barbarōs ē Guineā erāmus in servitūtem reportātūrī; quem ad ūsum et ipsa nāvis et omnis ejus dispositiō cēterīs erat valdē dīversa. Grandiuscula erat nāvis, nāvālēs sociī sexdecim. Cannōnās habēbat quīnque,—ūnam ā tergō,—nē forte aut cum praedōnibus aut cum nigrītīs foret cōnflīgendum; nēve, propter subitum aliquod in Eurōpā bellum, Lūsitāniā implicātā, nōs



tamquam Lūsitanī lacesserēmur. Ignipultae quoque inerant plūrēs, pars vēnandō, alia pars pugnae apta. Simul pulveris nitrātī plumbīque rotundātī vim magnam vehēbāmus, atque adeō hominem ūnum tōtī reī jaculātōriae praefectum: Artillātor appellābātur. Hārum rērum impēnsā valdē minuitur negōtiātōribus lucrum, nisi quod hōc in commerciō merx quae exportātur vīlissima est; quae reportātur, pretiōsissima.

54. Aliquot fabās prīmā in rate asportāvī. Quamquam sciēbam magnam hujus cibī vim nāvī fuisse impositam, sed īnfra in alveō, crēdidī marīnā aquā corruptam esse. Nihilōminus dēscendō. Puppim versus omnia sicca erant; in īnferiōre parte aqua stāgnābat. Sed nōn mē illud repellit. Īnfra nūdus, per aquam incēdō, quae genū attingēbat, scrūtorque mercēs pal pandō: tandem saccōs inveniō fabīs plēnōs. Ūnum hōrum placēbat āvehere, sed quandō cōnor, nequeō ad tabulāta extollere. Rē dēlīberātā, nōn operae pretium vidētur dē cibō madidō labōrem pendere; nam asservārī posse quis spoponderit? 55. Mox rēs dūrās acūtāsque sub pedibus sentiō; ipsa erant ferrāmenta, quae inter mercēs nostrās imperāveram. Pālae, plānē nostrātium īnstar, profectō nōn inerant; tantum ligōnēs, furcillātaeque marrae, praeter sarcula ac dolābrās. Deinde in secūrēs incidō. Tālēs rēs sub aquā dījūdicāre, paulum difficile erat. Num operae esset pretium auferre,—dubitābam. Tandem aliquot cujusque generis assūmō, praesertim capita secūrium ac ligōnum. 56. Posteā fēlicior eram. Nam in conclāvī quōdam, quod coquī nostrī erat proprium, quīnque offendī corbēs, fabārum plēnās, apprīmē siccārum. Hās cūrātius repōnō āvehendās, et aliam post aliam cūnctās dēmum ad terram dēportō salvās. 57. Porrō dum mēnsam fabrīlem āmovēbam, quae suprā erat, nōn in alveō, pōne in angulō fascēs quōsdam mercium retēxī. Hōs aperiō. Intus erant versicolōrēs vestēs, quās propter Āfrōrum commercium imperāveram. Avidē corripīō, sed nesciēbam quārē. Posteā numerāvī, invēnīque sexāgintā. Cēterae, ut opīnor, fuerant in alveō.

58. Duodecimō māne, ut rēmīgō ex portū ratem pōne trahēns, flūctus asperior aliquantum aquae in cymbam immīsīt. Exhaurīre simul atque rēmīgāre nōn poteram: sī rēmōs inhibērem, verēbar nē dēflexa cursū cymba latus undīs objiceret. In portum, ut tūtius, statim redeō: ibi rōborandam suscipiō cymbam. Altiōrem faciō prōram, additīs tabulīs, quae, ferreīs virgīs firmātae, aliquantum asperginis possint rejicere. Nōn longī labōris erat illud; sed nimius ventus mē terrēbat, igitur reliquum diem scaphae addīxī. 59. Illud cōnsīderāveram. Naufragium recente lūnā passī erāmus ipsīs in

Kalendīs Septembribus. Ad plēnilūnium iterum intumēscēte Ōceanō posse crēdēbam sublevārī scapham; grande mōmentum, servārētur-ne an prōrsus cōnfringerētur. Ex arcīs meīs ūnam dēligō, aquae (sīquā alia) impenetrābilem. Quidquid in scaphā īnfirum vidētur, summā meā arte reficiō, seu stuppā ac pice, seu argillā vitreāriā opus sit. Simul ac aestus recesserat, ancoram quam longissimē per arēnās mare versus trahō, suō ancorālī artius scaphae colligātam. Dentem ancorae firmiter dēfīgō, quoad possum. Ipsō in ancorālī, circā septem pedēs ab ancorā, fūnem brevem nōdō astrictissimō implicō; mox hūc dēportātam arcam eōdem fūne connectō. 60. Illud ēvenit, quod spērāveram. Arca, aestū īnsurgente sublevāta, simul ut ad scapham aqua pertingēbat, (nam ego cum spē metūque cūcta notābam) incēpit scapham attrahere. Tum prō cūpā<sup>[B]</sup> natante arca mihi erat. Cōnfestim dēcurrō ad cymbam. Per aestum rēmigō, ubi propter altitudinem aquae flūctus nōn sē frangēbat; et ut primum scapham assequor, eam remulcō inhibēns, solvō ancorāle; nam ancoram extrahere, nimī id fuisset temporis. Mox, ovāns et praegestiēns, scapham in portum dēdūcō incolumem. Haec in duodecimō erant diē. 61. Māne īnsequente, quum speculor, sentiō marī male crēdī: tamen quāsdam etiam rēs volūi ēripere, quamquam ratī nōn cōnfidēbam. Scālās nāvis ac tollēnōnem ad ultimum reliqueram. Optimās habēbat forēs diaeta<sup>[C]</sup> prīcipālis: hās concupīvī, quia bonā erant fabricā. Cardinēs facile āvellō: forēs reste firmiter colligō. Dein sūculās<sup>[D]</sup> cum trochleīs<sup>[E]</sup> assūmpsi; ipsius porrō tollēnōnis ferrāmenta omnia: sed scapum rōstrumque ejus, quae lignea erant, trahenda per aquās dēstināvī, cum scālīs et foribus. Ferreum onus, ūnō homine nōn gravius, in cymbā dēcernō asportāre.

62. Impigrē rediī, sed aestus in hōrās magis tumēscēbat. Tunc quum maximē intrābam portūs ōstium, agmen pōne tractum adeō disjectābat cymbam, ut ego perterritus fūnēs necessariō absolverim, nē dēmergerer. Incolumis egomet postēs illōs praetereō, laetus quod nīl mihi cymbaeque accidisset, praeter asperginem profūsam. 63. Ventus etiam atque etiam incrūdēscēbat: post trēs hōrās violenta flābat procella, quae tōtam per noctem furēbat. Māne, ut prōspexī, ēvānuerat nāvis.

---

## CAPUT (III.) TERTIUM.

64. Equidem ut vacuum aspectābam mare, neque lacrimātus sum neque gemuī, nē agitābar quidem animō. Sed tenerum quendam sentiēbam affectum, tamquam sī fessā aetāte parēns, cuius magnīs fruimur beneficiīs, lēgitimē ac necessariō dēcessisset. Immō nōn tam nāvis quam egomet vidēbar obiisse mortem. Ab hominibus abscindor, novō sum in orbe rērum, astō tamquam in aeternitātis sōlitūdine. Ignōtus mē circumambit Deus, cuius sentiō tum misericordiam tum sevērītatem, mē ipsum culpāns sed nōn amārē, nec sine modō. Nōn in genua prōcumbō; nōn precēs, nōn vōta concipiō; grātēs nōn effundō, nec paenitentiam; tamen caeca quaedam, ut opīnor, mē penetrābat venerātiō. Certē eram et tranquillissimus, et quasi religiōsē dēfīxus. 65. Ex hōc statū mē expergēfacit canis, amanter blandiēns. “Āh! quam vellem possēs colloquī,” inquam clārē; et amōre ergā canem haediculamque meam atque ipsās fēlēs valdē pertentor. Prope paenitet mē, quod capram mātrem occīdī. Quoniam brūta animālia, sī modo reciprocāre amōrem possint, commūnem habent nōbīs sociālemque nātūrā, nōlō vītā ēripere temerē. Haec cōgitāns, īnsuper meminī, parcere nitrātō pulverī quam sit bonum, pondus caprae quam fuerit molestum. Paulō post quaerēbam, cūr, sī vīctum terra subjicit, mālim ferārum mōre raptās vītās praedārī. Illa sānē quaestiō profundius in pectus dēscendit, postquam ūbertātem īnsulae plēnius compertam habuī. 66. Sed exsultō, et pāstīs animālibus, dē fabīs meīs satagō, quārum aliquās aquā coctās velim, prō canis cibātū. Postea hās coquēbam cum carnis frustīs, cum sēbō, lārdō, dēmum piscibus vel oleō; faciēbamque massās quadrātās: tum sī aliunde nihil foret in promptū, hinc et canem et fēlēs pāscēbam. Semper dēnique hōc modō pauxillulum carnis aut piscium prō condīmentō adjungēbam fabīs, farīnae vel rādīcibus.

67. Posterō diē, caelō serēnō et marī tranquillō, ligna tollēnōnis et diaetae forēs ējecta sunt in lītore; cum minōre dētrīmentō quam quis exspectāverit. Hās rēs, ut prīmum possum, citrā vim undārum trahō; dēnique in cavernās

illās, dē quibus dīxī, dēpōnō, et quandō ab aliīs operibus vacō, restituō tollēnōnis ferrāmenta. Postēa hunc ad nāvāle meum cōstituī, propter ūsūs scaphae. 68. Sed dē domiciliō meō multa erant dēcernenda. Cavernās in rūpe quō lātius explōrāveram, magis admīror. Ultrā numerum vidēbantur. Aliae patēbant, sine externō pariete, tamquam porticus aut ambulācrum; aliae angustā jānuā, intus camerātae, jūnctae sunt item internīs ōstiīs, ita ut tōta rūpēs velut spongia esse posset. 69. Contemplāns crēdidī, hās marī esse excavātās: nam sub pedibus pavīmentum erat saxeum, molliter tamquam flūctibus rotundātum, et quasi per lātissimōs gradūs ascendēns. Omnia mea possem hīc optimā cum disciplīnā dispōnere; sed dē cubiculō erat praecipuē cōgitandum; nec libēbat arborem meam prius relinquere, quam mūnītius quiddam reperīrem. 70. Illud animadvertī,—nihil saxōrum praeter lītus jacēre, quod ā rūpe cecidisset; et quidem ubi gelū est ignōtum, rārīor esse dēbet tālis rūpiū lābēs. Porrō pavīmenta cavernārum parcā tantum arēnā vestiēbantur, tamquam ventō illātā. Lacūnāria ferē camerāta erant, hīc atque hīc quasi stīriārum massīs distīncta. Aquās per rūpem stillantēs crēdiderim saxō saturātās fuisse. 71. Lītus externum, propius undās, algārum erat ferāx; internum, ultrā summōs aestūs, aliā quādam algā et cactīs aliīsque spīnōsīs fruticibus opplēbātur. Plūrēs hōrum in decem pedēs surgēbant, aliquot in quīndecim. Ex hīs silva plūrima et quasi umbrāculum ante cavernās praetexēbātur, nē quis ē marī vel ā rūpe oppositā facile intrō perspiceret. Ego autem, arreptā secūrī, continuam sub rūpe aperiēbam sēmitam, succīsīs cactīs cēterīsque, quidquid nimium obstāret. Jamque velut in meam vīllam mē recondō. 72. Ē cavernīs duās praesertim dēnotāvī, ūnam prō cubiculō, alteram prō penāriā. Utraque internum habēbat ōstium, per quod aura flābat salūbris. Sēnseram autem, et apud Maurōs et in Brazīliā, quantum nox frīgidula corpus fervōribus adustum fovēret atque recreāret; et sī in magicā hāc horrendāque īnsulā (sīc eam quandōque vacuīs oculīs contemplābar) per summōs calōrēs habitandum mihi foret, tāle cubiculum magnī aestimābam. Opera quaedam hīc meditābar, sī hūc mea omnia congererem; propter quod cōsultō opus erat. 73. Marī seu terrā, ipsam ratem, sīve bona mea ex rate, dēdūcerem, aut perīculōsum aut labōriōsum fore opīnābar. Mox subit haedī cūra, cui neque pābulum hōc in locō habēbam neque aquam dulcem. Mihimet profectō aquam imprīmīs anquīrere opus erat: sed nōn diū hujus reī inopiam queror. 74. Etenim postquam per spīnās fruticētī longius patefēcī viam, et dulcem aquam et nāvāle scaphae idōneum inveniō. Post quīngentōs amplius pedēs abrupta humus erat, alveō marīnō intus

penetrante, tamquam ōstiō rīvulī. Intellegō alveum hunc, quasi flūmen submarīnum, ad Postēs Saxeōs continuārī; intus autem nāvāle, mihi satis profundum, etiam in recessū aestūs praeberī. 75. Hunc in alveum rīvus ē terrā praeceps dēcurrēbat. Spatium autem praetereundī inter rūpem alveumque satis lātum patēbat, succīsīs modo fruticibus. Jam tollēnōnem mente dēstinō in margine ērigendum: sed redeō contentus in vallem, dē ordinātiōne bonōrum meōrum meditāns. 76. Omnia dē prīmā illā rate dētrahō dispōnōque subter quādam arbore, cum ipsā ratis māteriē. Latēre volēbam, sī forte quis advenīret. Plūrimās caedō virgās, quae facillimē ūdō in solō possint frondēscere, hāsque ita dēfīgō, ut quam maximē, quidquid sit intus, obtegant. Hūc dēdūcō haedum, velut suum in praesaepe. Cistās quae pecūniam, quae astrologicam supellectilem, quae pulverem nitrātum continēbant, hās et capsās scrīptōriās aliāsque rēs minōrēs, singulātīm ad cavernās asportāvī: postea culīnae īnstrūmentum.

77. Post aliquot diēs, hīs rēbus ordinātīs, caelō serēnō, cēseō dēambulandum. Caput īnfulā dēnsā, Turcārum mōre, obvolvō; quod quidem in Brazīliā faciēbam. Balteō pistolisque succingor. Grandem cultrum plicātilem sūmō ac pēram; dein convallem ascendō juxtā rīpam flūminis. Novā in regiōne omnia nōn possum lēctōris animō subijcere, quae meīs occurrēbant oculīs; sed plūra cōnābor paulātīm expedīre. 78. Avium versicolōrum tanta erat multitūdō, ut nisi in Brazīliā praereptā mihi esset admīrātiō, tunc obstupēscerem. Hīc autem mē praesertim alliciēbat pulcherrima illa avicula, quam in Occidentālibus īnsulīs Anglī *aviculam bombilantem* appellant. Plūra quidem hujus generis passim volitābant, item mīra pāpiliōnum varietās. 79. Immō, nōn modo alia prōrsus arborum, fruticum, grāminum, foliōrum genera appārēbant, nostrīs hominibus ignōtū, vērū etiam ferē omnis arbor reptātōriīs fruticibus, vītium aut hederārum ad īnstār, vestiēbātur; atque adeō, obruēbantur plūrimae. Ē tantā varietāte vix quidquam prīmō poteram agnōscere: cēterum imprīmīs anquīrō esculentās rādīcēs atque ignis alimentum. 80. Quidquid juncōrum obviam vēnit vel cannārum, medullam explōrāvī, anne idōneum praeberet fōmitem. Tria dēnum genera in pēram sēlēcta condidī, quae experīmentō probārem. Āridās sīve lignī sīve lignōsōrum foliōrum reliquiās celerrimā flammā ārsūrās crēdēbam. Tālis māteria plūrēs asportāvī pugillōs. Rubōs quoque notāvī dūmōsque āridōs, ex quibus immēnsa cōpia cremandō sufficerētur. 81. Mox fruticem videō, quī piper gignit; sed magis gaudēbam, quod dioscōreās ēsculentās invēnī multās. Duo hārum genera optima prō certō

agnōveram,—quae *ālāta* appellātur, et quae *globōsa*. Ulterius perscrūtāns, adeō abundāre intellegō hās rādīcēs, ut, sī cōservārī possint, cibus semper futūrus sit in promptū. Jam *cinchōnam* videō arborem, colligōque rāmulōs plūrēs. Nē longus sim, satis sit nārrāre, mē circā hōs locōs postea invēnisse medicās quāsdam herbās, quās in Brazīliā didiceram, et aliās quās prō condīmentīs cibōrum aestimābam. 82. Acclīvitās vallis augēscēbat. Vix quattuor mīllia passuum aestus marīnus in terram penetrat; sed modicus rīvus plūrēsque rīvulī dēscendēbant per plantās et arbusculās. Propius ad collēs dēnsantur generum dīversōrum arborēs, grandēs aliquot. Nova simul atque ārida folia in eādem cōsistēbant arbore, id quod colōrēs pulcherrimōs contendēbat: immō, exoriēbantur frūctuum germina ipsō ē rāmō, unde pendēbant frūctūs putrēscentēs. 83. Quīnque vel sex mīllia continuāvī iter, semper ascendēns convallem. Ēn vērō, hīc locī seges illa pretiōsissimā blanditur oculīs, *zēa* virōre et aurō fulgēns. Plēnē mātūram crēdidī. Humī jacēbant grāna plūrima et siliquae. Pigēbat mē, quod major mihi pēra nōn erat in promptū. Quantum potuī, īnferciēbam, jamque prō certō habēbam cibum mihi numquam dēfore. Tandem collēs sinistrī sē dēmīsere; atque alia vallis, lātior atque amoenissima, quasi hortōs viridissimōs in sinū suō retegīt. In fronte mihi assurgēbant juga altiōra, montēs paene dīcerem, spissīs vestīta herbīs, ex quibus undique stillābant rīvulī perennēs. Arborēs frūctificās admīror, inter quās dispiciēns agnōscō citrōs, aureās mālōs,<sup>[F]</sup> et Assyriās mālōs, quās *līmōnās* appellāmus. Sānē jūcundissimus erat rūris aspectus, mēque sēnsī esse opulentum lātifundiōrum dominum. Utramque vallem mihi tamquam proprium prōtinus asserō, nōminōque priōrem convallem meam, vel Convallem Flūminis, alteram Hortōs meōs.

84. Multum mē alliciēbat hortōrum amoenitās, cōpia arborum et dulcis aquae, dēfēnsiōque montium. Dēliberābam dē commigrandō illūc, nisi quod nōllem maris prōspectum āmittere, sī nāvis venīret: immō, prōrsus nōluī cymbae scaphaeque ūsūs renūntiāre: necnōn per pluviālēs hōrās nihil cum cavernīs meīs vidēbātur contendere. Etenim hāc in regiōne caelī liquēbat mihi dīrissimās aliquandō esse expectandās procellās, quae tentōria ac domicilia perverterent; tālī in tempestāte nīl cavernīs esse comparandum. Pigēbat mē vidēre frūctūs plūrimōs et optimōs humī prōstrātōs et aquā putrēscentēs. Arborēs passim vim ventī prōdēbant. Sine dubiō autumnālēs procellae tantās fēcērant ruīnās. Sērius ego hōs in locōs prōcesseram, messe frūctuum praeteritā. Attamen hōc sub astrō tam vegeta est vīs terrae

genitālis, ut novī frūctūs appārērent, quī mox possent mātūrēscere. Plūrēs hōrum concupīvī, et dē modō convehendī meditābar.

85. Rediī ad cavernās alacer animī, cūrārum oblītus. Pēram opplēveram illīs rēbus quās memorāvī; loculōs autem vestium arōmatīs, gummīne et citreīs mālīs aliquot. Prōtinus novōs thēsaurōs cūrātē dīgerō. Dēnique ā cavernīs in arborem meam propter noctem retrō cēdere, paulō labōriōsius vidētur.

86. Māne quum expergīscor, sentiō diērum mē āmīsisse computātiōnem. Nē prōrsus fierem barbarus, ad disciplīnam puerīlem mē redūxī. Diēs incipiō in digitīs numerāre. Quid ūnōquōque diē fēcērim, ego mihimet recitō; inde comperiō, quīnam sit hodiernus diēs. Tum volō mathēmaticus ratiōnēs retractāre. Dīxī mē quattuor librōs ē nāvī āvēxisse. Ūnus erat precum sacrārum libellus, secundum normās Papālēs: alterum erat dē Geōgraphiā: tertium nihil habēbat nisi numerōs ad ūsum nāvigandī dīgestōs: quārtus ipsam nautārum mathēmaticam tractābat. Hanc perlegō libenter. Quippe nōn solum sōlitūdine animum āvertit, sed absolūtius quiddam et sublīmius subjēcit cōgitantī, nē semper dē meīs tantummodo cūrīs satagerem.

87. Quaerere potest lēctor, quī factum sit, ut ego, patre invītō nāvigāns, nauticam mathēmaticam ēdidicerim. Vidēlicet, admodum juvenis Londinium petiī, nāvem anquīsītūrus, in quā peregrē īrem. Magna mihi tunc illa fēlīcītās vidēbātur, quod hūmānissimō cuidam virō, nāvis magistrō, incidī, in Guineam nāvigātūrō. Is mē clēmētissimē exceptum, prō suō sodāle habuit; persuāsitque ut, quantam maximam possem conquīrere pecūniam, hanc commūtārem idōneā merce quālem ipse admonēbat, et apud sē collocārem. Ego igitur quōsdam ex amīcīs pecūniās rogābam, hīque, exōrātā mātrem meā, fortasse etiam patre, quadrāgintā librās Anglicās ad mē remīsērunt. Eās autem magister optimus sīc administrāvit, ut, ex Āfricā dēmum reversus, mercem quam rettulī, nempe aureum pulverem, Londiniī trecentīs librīs Anglicīs mūtāverim. Porrō (quod eram lēctorī dēmōnstrātūrus) ipsō in cursū, cum benevolentīā vērē paternā, omnia quae nāvis magistrum scīre oportēret, dīligentissimē mē docēbat, praesertim astrologicōrum praecepta, viāsque caelum servandī. Ego sānē, tantā cārītate dēlēnītus, summā industriā haec in studia incubuī, rediīque ex hāc expeditiōne magnopere auctus mentis vī, sive ad nāvigātiōnem, sive ad mercātūram. Atquī, Ō meam maximam calamitātem! amīcus ille summus

meus atque alter pater, morbo vehemente correptus, decessit subito. Hujus me tenera subito memoria, dum praecepta mathematicorum retracto, dum stellam Polarem observo, locique latitudinem (quam appellant astrologi) colligo; item dum noctibus singulis omnium horologiorum libramenta convoluta intendo.

88. In animo imprimis erat, ut Christiano more septimum quemque diem quodammodo religiosè observarem; enimvero mecum constituēbam septenorum dierum opera. Sic (credebam) temporis computationem eram servaturus. Mox vidi fore ut multa me prohiberent ullam praefinitam laborum rotam sequi; necnon sine religiosā contione res nihil mihi erat dies Dominicus: itaque ad aliam rationem me properè converti. Novae lunae observantur facillimè et paene necessariò. Navis fracta erat nocte proximā post novam lunam: quando altera advēnit nova luna, decrevi mecum, atque unum defodi stipitem propter mensem lunarem. Postea elegantius res administrandās censeo. Paxillos praeparo tredecim modicos et comparēs, gemens identidem si univsum annum hic mihi degendum erit. In axe idoneae magnitudinis tredecim foramina terebro, illis paxillis accommodata. Quoties redit nova luna, paxillum solemniter infigo. Post lunam tredecies novatam, cunctos extrahō paxillos, grandius terebro foramen et grandiozem insero palum. Hic pro anno lunari valet. Mox procedente luna, menstruos paxillos alium post alium restituo. His constitutis, novā quivis lunā poteram computandō affirmare, quānam esset ille dies secundum Europaeas temporis rationēs.



---

## CAPUT (IV.) QUĀRTUM.

89. Jam ad rēs convehendās trahulam dēcernō parāre: nam reī fabrīlis nōn eram imperītus. Hanc profectō artem in Brazīliā magnopere exercēbam, cum propter variōs ūsūs, tum quia ipse mē animus excitābat. Fabrīlis nempe opera valdē fuit necessāria nōbīs, nec servīs nigrītīs satis bene cognita. Faber noster lignārius, bonus ille quidem vir, malleō fortiter feriēbat, serrā patienter labōrābat: sed accūrātē mētūrī, coartāre commissūrās, immō, rēctam līneam dūcere, vix calluit; nēdum dēsignāre opus. Sī novam quandam casam vel officīnam struere oportēbat, praepropera ejus industria absurdissimīque errōrēs angēbant mē. Itaque hunc dum parō docēre, ipse artem discō. Mathēmaticā meā scientiā quālīcumque adjūtus, poteram sānē plūra animō mōlīrī, in chartā dēscrībēre, cōstituere, computāre. Mox ipsīs ferrāmentīs manū prehēnsīs, dēlīneābam, dissecābam, runcīnābam; nihil quod lignārii fabrī est, intentātum relinqūō. 90. Jamque, ut dīcēbam, ad cōfingendam trahulam mē convertō, quae et per arēnās et super leviōrem rūpium superficiem facile currat. Dōliō quōdam ligneō, quod perfrāctum erat, dētrahō circulōs ferreōs. Hōs, velut calceōs, trabibus duōbus brevibus paribusque, lēniter curvātīs, subjiciō. Suprā, simplicissimum cōstituō currum, in quō vehātur onus vīribus meīs tractū nōn nimium. Restim addō, atque fīnītum est opus. Quoniam in recessū aestūs continuus erat arēnae margō ā praesaepī meō usque ad portum, hāc viā, quaecumque vellem, in animō erat trahere: nec jam manibus humerīsve portābam. Postea domum ipsam cūrātius dīgerō atque excolō.

91. Conclāvia vērō habuī nūlla; plūra quidem saepta, siquidem ūnaquaeque caverna, seu locus camerātus, erat prō saeptō. Prīcipāle saeptum, meum ipsius, erat *cubiculum*, dē cujus mūnīmentīs erit dīcendum: dein *penāria*, prō cibō quālīcumque: tertium, *culīna*; tum, *fūmārium*; deinceps *armāmentārium* sive *fabrica*; sextum erat *mūsēum*. In mūsēo librōs, hōrologia, astrologicam supellectilem, lībram trutināriam, māteriam omnem scrīptōriam repōnō, cum sellā, ē tribus quās habēbam, optimā.

Hārum rērum aliquot cum pecūniā in cistīs erant: mēnsam postea cōnfēcī. Septimum saeptum continēre dēbēbat ignis māteriem; *lignārium* appellābam. Octāvum prō *frūctuāriō* cēdēbat. Novum prō haedī *stabulō* dēstinābam. Decimum ac remōtissimum nitrātī erat pulveris repositōrium. 92. Cubiculum autem tāle fuit. Angustā ac celsā fenestrā intrābātur, cuius līmen quīnque pedēs ab externō solō, duōs ab internō aestimāverim. Alteram intus habēbat fenestram, per quam aura flābat salūbris: hanc tamen, prae multā meā cautiōne, trānsennā prōtēxī. Dē vāllanda externā fenestrā cōgitāveram; sed arboreum meum opus imitārī, in saxō nimis difficile vidēbātur. Plūrēs portārum fōrmās cōnsīderō, mox rejiciō. Puteum potius volō sub fenestrā fodere, quem ipse scālīs trānseam, dein scālās intus ad mē retraham. 93. Nāvālēs scālae merī erant gradūs ligneī, firmiter cōnstrictī fūnibus, quī pondus hominis tūtō sustentābant. In nāvis latere septem amplius dēpendēbant pedēs. Latera nunc hīs adjungō lignea, tantummodo ut rigōrem, nōn ut rōbur addam; nam fūnium rōbur sufficiēbat; sed quia flexilēs erant, id hīc erat incommodum. Scālae sīc refectae octo pedum habēbant longitudinem. 94. Deinde ligōnēs recognōscō cūnctōs, et marrās bifurcās trifidāsque, sī quid hōrum possit cunīculāriae hastae vicem gerere; solum enim calcārium rōbustō egēbat ferrāmentō. Tālia invēnī īnstrūmenta, quōrum ope puteum, brevem sānē, dēfōdī sub ipsā fenestrā, duo tantum pedēs altum, sed quattuor amplius ā rūpe exstantem. Vecte ferreō, quamquam nōn acūtō, graviōra saxa āmōlītus sum, postquam initia penetrandī factū sunt. Tum hōc puteō adeō prōtēctus vidēbar, ut nē ā pardō quidem foret metuendum. 95. Illud enim mē cōfirmābat, quod fēlēs ferae quae nōn 1nāribus cōnfīsae, vēnantur, numquam possent conjectāre, quid in meō cubiculō dormīret. Ego vērō interdum serpentēs quoque formīdābam: sed numquam nē ūnum quidem anguem, magnum parvumve, meā in īnsulā vīdī; quae, velut Hibernia, sānctī Patriciī benedictiōne vidēbātur fruī. Stēlliōnēs erant in cavernīs, quōs fovēbam, quia muscās īnsectāsque comedunt: et sānē facile mānsuēscēbant. 96. Sī ligōnibus rēs nōn cessisset, fodīnam parātus eram nitrātō pulvere displōdere. Praetermīsī nārrāre, mē, postquam dōlium pulveris nitrātī 1aquā marīnā corruptū, dēportāvī, intus crustam invēnisse dūram, intrā quam pulvis siccus erat et plānē incolumis. Crustam malleō comminūtā reservāvī, et prō experīmentō, vel lūsūs causā, aliquotiēs in pyrotechnicā adhibueram, diffīsus posse in aliquam ūtilitātem convertī. Postea crēdēbam rūdera haec nitrāta ad fodīnās displōdendās esse accommodāta: igitur asservāvī, sī forte ūsus venīret. 97.

Pulvere nitrātō eram profectō assuētissimus, dē quā rē libet amplius explicāre lēctōrī. Etenim dum dēgēbam in Brazīliā, maximō studiō „missilis plumbī dīrigendī perītiā” colēbam. Nec sānē umquam hujus exercitātiōnis fueram aliēnus; sed neque patriam circā urbem, neque super marī opportunitātēs eam excolendī reppereram. Attamen in Brazīliā, rūre apertō, ingentibus silvīs, ubi prōdigiōsa īnsectārū vīs „mīrificā avium quoque cōpiā” in aeternum praestat, sī quis sub sōle potest esse agilis, ad avēs vēnandās ipsō agrō attrahitur. Prīmō habēbam ignipultam quandam ā dominō meō Maurūsiō dēreptam; mox meliōrēs quaesīvī, imprīmīs ex Lūsitāniā. Posteā Helvēticī cūjusdam virī, quī Rōmae mercēnāriōrū mīlitum praefectus fuerat, ignipultās duās vel optimās forte potuī emere, ūnam duōrū tubōrū; quās quidem hujus filius, post patris mortem illātenus ēvagātus, inter aliās rēs vēndidit. Equidem ad tēla illa probanda in scopum aliquandō collīneābam: sed quia valdē incertus erat ā longinquō jactus, plūrēs ac minōrēs ūnō in tubō cōnferciēbam glandēs, quae, per āera dispersae, lātius ferīrent. Furcā item *bitubam* illam sustentābam, propter certiōrem ictum. Et quoniam grandīōrēs illīc abundābant ālitēs, ut vulturius, ut ferus olor, ut gruēs atque ardeae nostrīs dīversae,—nec deest strūthiō quīdam—hōs quoque pilulīs olōrīnīs petēbam, jaculandīque omnīnō perītissimus ēvāsī. Prōh caecitātem hominū! quippe nesciēbam quantum in sōlitāriā īnsulā haec mihi ars esset prōfutūra.

98. Simul ac cubiculum satis firmāveram, voluī illūc commigrāre, cūctīs cum animālībus meis. Haedus paululum clauda erat, id quod nōn dolēbam: tantō minus erat mē effugitūra. At vērō trēs jam mihi erant haedī, dē quō nārrandum erit. Cēterum falcātō gladiō „quidquid idōneum vidēbātur herbārū aut frondium” dēmetēbam et convehēbam ad cavernās: multum sānē „sōlī expositum siccātumque” recondidī. Haedōs omnēs suō in stabulō composuī.

99. Dē novīs haedīs incipit nārrātiuncula. Trahulā jam meā adjūtus, cupīdinem admīseram vēnandī iterum, nē canī fēlibusque carō dēforet. Trahulam per clīvōs clēmētiōrēs sūrsum trāxī super mollī brevīque herbā, ignipultam in trahulā habēns. Canem nōn potuī retinēre, quīn lepusculōs vēnārētur: is prōrsus ēvānuit. Ego ut prīmum in scopulōsum dēvēnī iter, trahulam omittō, inter saxa serpō. Ēmergēs capram cōnspicor cum haedīs ad stāgnū herbōsō in prātulō. Nōn mē fūgērunt, neque dēmōnstrābant metum. Dēcerpō grāmina, accēdō propius et porrigō. Haedī accurrunt,

libenterque rōdunt. Ego cornua eōrum resticulīs cingō, et laqueīs bracchiō meō adnectō. Iterum iterumque dēcerpō grāmen, studeōque mānsuēfacere. Accurrit māter capra, grandis et rōbusta; haec quoque ē manū meā comēdit. Paenitēbat mē, quod voluissem tam cicurem animantem occīdere; nunc rōbustiōre eam adnectō reste. Sed ut primum vī sē tractam sentit, violenter retortō capite manū sē meā abripit, et priusquam mē possim recolligere, cum reste effugit. Exiguō temporis intervallō convertitur. Haedōs mēcum videt, et dīrēctō cursū „summō cum furōre,“ mē petit. Magnum equidem sēnsī esse perīculum, nam et cornū incurrentis et ipse impetus lētālis esse poterat. Coāctus mē tuērī, dēmittor in dextrum genū, nē dēerrem, ignipultam cōstantissimē dīrigēns. Vix quīndecim distābat pedēs, atque ego ignem ēmittō. Quamquam capite et collō trānsverberāta, plūrēs gressūs illō impetū ēvecta est, titubānsque ad dextram meam prōcubuit ēmortua. 100. Obstupēscēbam, incertus quid facerem. Mox capram libuit omittere, haedōs attinēre: nec longa erat ad praesaepe via, per ardua dēscendentī. Grāmina etiam etiam dēcerpsī recondidīque in sacculum; et sīquandō male sequerentur haedī, grāmen ante ōra ostentāns, alliciēbam. Hōc modō incolumēs dēdūxī, gaudēns praesertim quod mās et fēmina erant. Paxillīs celeriter prope claudam haedum advenās dēpangō, suggerō grāmina; tum festīnō, mātrem reportātūrus. Regressus, trahulam coāctus sum per asperiōra loca, ut possem, subducere, dum mortuam assequor, quam aegrē in trahulam compōnō; dein satis labōriōsē hanc cum ignipultā per saxōsa loca dēducō, mox facilius super clīvīs herbōsīs. Illam, ut priōrem, dēmergere in pēlvī sive piscīnā volēbam, sed spurcam crēdidī: quārē nīl melius nōveram, quam ut in praesēns rāmīs frondōsīs corpus operīrem: etenim ligō et pāla nōn erant in prōmptū. 101. Jam dē ferārum audentiā reputāns, intellegō hominēs hāc in īnsulā esse ignōtōs. Id multum mē sōlātur; nam quantumvis sōlitūdinem dērectābam, barbarōs saevōsque hominēs formīdābam longē amplius. Porrō sī leporēs avēsque, aequē ac caprī, hominis metū vacant, sī nunc haec animālia facile mānsuēfiant, stultē absterrērī opīnor. Itaque magis magisque pulverī nitrātō parcendum dēcernō, et, quidquid ferārum posset, mānsuēficiendum.

102. Etiam congerēbam pābulum. Multās dēportābam siliquās zēā plēnās, et dioscōreās aliāsque rādīcēs; item cēpa, bulbōs, condīmenta. Caprae secundae carnem partim siccāveram fūmō, partim sale condīveram, nec jam dē cibō eram sollicitus. Duās viās ē cavernīs ad summam rūpem ligōne ac vecte tūtius jam mūniō; ūnam, quā prīmō illō māne, prōspectā scaphā, per

praecipitia atque algās dēgressus sum; alteram ex portū praeter nāvāle meum. In difficiliōre locō „stūpitēs duo firmiter dēfossōs, fūne connectō, quō audācius sēcūriusque dēscendam; tum gradibus incīsīs, opus perficiō.

103. In reportandā caprā, trahulae mē quōdammodo paenitēbat. In arēnīs quidem bene currēbat, item per saxa lēvia grāmine vestīta; sed in ferācī humō super spissīs variīsque herbīs, inter admixtōs fruticēs, trahere quam portāre difficilior fore sentiō: ad dioscōreās, ad zēam, ad citrōs aliōsque frūctūs convehendōs pērās sacculōsque meōsque humerōs antepōnī oportēre trahulae, nisi meliōrem poterō mūnīre viam: id quod mē male habet. Igitur ūniversam vīcīniā explōrāre cupiō.—Dīxī mē ab excelsō quōdam colle prōspectāsse. Hōc colle īnferior alter, quī cavernās meās ferē ex adversō dēspiciēbat, lītoris aspectum superiōrī adēmerat. Quum, ascēnsā rūpe, in īnferiōrī colle astō (quem *Speculam* meam nōmināvī) admīrāns gaudēnsque propiōrem lītoris ōram contemplor. Ad dextram, id est, ad occidentem, flūminis videō ōstium, deinde portum meum, tum in fronte prōmontorium modicum.<sup>[G]</sup> Contrā autem ad sinistram, id est, ad orientem, inter humilēs rūpēs ac mare, acclīvis plānitiēs arboribus prōcērīs mīrē luxuriābat, palmīs praesertim. Suprā, pōne rūpēs, palūs quaedam seu lacus angustus extenditur: rūsus super hōc novus atque excelsior rūpiū ac saxōrum ōrdō, unde pluviās crēdō in palūdem colligī. In ōrā palūdis viridissimās advertō herbās, plūrimāsque avēs aquātilēs. 104. Sed ego ad interiōra mē convertō. Ab excelsiōre illō colle arborēs quāsdam in cavō locō vīderam, nōn multās illās quidem. Jam explōrāns perspiciō omnia praeter summās arborēs abscondita mihi tunc fuisse, interjectō quōdam īnferiōre grūmō. Clīvus ille montis quasi pēlvī erat ingente excavātus, in quam multum aquārum ex scopulōsā illā regiōne cōfluit. Hae, grāminibus sustentātae, perpetuum sufficiēbant rīvum, quī in flūmen, nōn longē ā praesaepī meō, dēcurrēbat. Inde fuerat mihi prīmus ille dulcis aquae haustus. Hāc in pēlvī (nam propriū hujus fōrmae nōmen nesciō:—convallis nōn erat) cōsistēbant arborēs plūrimae, Eurōpaeārum aspectum praeferentēs. Amplius postea perscrūtātus, repperī hās nōn esse nostrātium ad īnstar, tamen frūctuī lignōque ūtilēs. Hunc locum appellō *Saltum* meum. 105. Hinc poteram ligna dēvehere, sīve ad fabrīlēs ūsūs sīve ignis grātiā, multō facilius quam ā flūminis convalle. Quippe grandis rāmus vel ipse arboris truncus, tractus seu humī dēvolūtus, ad rūpem erat facile dēscēnsūrus. Sīc postea saepius rem gessī. Minōra ligna, quae ignī dēbēbant īnservīre, ex summā rūpe praecipitābam. Sed propter graviōra, quae diffringī nōlēbam, rōbustam

dēlēgī arborem, ipsum ad marginem, unde magis praeceps erat rūpēs. Cursuū tum dēvolventis lignī, fūne circā hujus stūpitem contortō, moderor ac temperō, dōnec ad fundum pervenit. Sed haec post aliquot mēnsēs.

106. Quō melius intellegat lēctor meārum rērum statum, dē sitū īnsulae et varietāte tempestātum quaedam sunt dīcenda. Īnsulae lātitudinem (quod Geōgraphī appellant) satis compertam habeo: poteram sānē in stēllā Polārī observandā errāre, sed nōn multum: gradūs, crēdō, habēbat duodecim (12°) ab aequinoctiālī circulō, Septentriōnēs versus. Dē longitudine nihil prō certō cōfirmāre ausim: arbitror tamen atque autumō eandem esse atque īnsulae quam Portum Opulentum (*Porto Rico*) appellant Hispānī. Nostrīs vērō in chartīs nihil omnīnō hīc dēnotābātur: porrō quaenam sit meae īnsulae longitudō geōgraphica, minimē nunc rēfert. Propter tempestātum nōtitiam satis est tenēre, bis in annō sōlem super verticem īnsurgere, ultimō ferē Aprīlis diē, sextōque ferē Sextīlis. Intrā hōs continuātur aestās, quae tamen imbribus satis violentīs dīviditur. Imber quotīdiānus ac modicus ferē ad finem Jūniī mēnsis cadit, sed ipsō in fine est sānē immodicus. Post hoc siccitās et calor subsequitur. Maximōs autem calōrēs in tertiā ferē parte hujus aestātis pōnō; vel, sī ad amussim dēnotandum est, trīgintā sex diēs ab Īdibus Quīntīlibus perdūrat aestuōsum tempus. Hōs intrā diēs rārīor est pluvia. Quiēscit ventus trīdium vel quatrīdium; tum vespertīnus turbō sānē violentus, attamen grātissimus, āera recreat. Hic rērum ōrdō fervōribus moderātur, longō mēse amplius. Tandem summa aestās disturbātur et quasi convellitur horrendīs et pervicācissimīs turbinibus, sēriōrī in parte Sextīlis. Hinc procellōsum illud mare, quod nostram abripuit nāvem. In Februāriō item mēse dēbent expectārī procellae; sed neque hārum tempus praefīnīrī potest neque violentiā comparēs sunt aestīvīs. In tempestāte procellōsā abundant fulgura, post quae frīgus ossa penetrat. Sed haec frīgora sī excipiās, jūcundissima est āeris temperiēs. Pluvia ut plūrimum cadit tenuis ac dulcissima trēs vel quattuor hōrās ūnōquōque māne per plūrēs annī mēnsēs. Nisi per tonitrua, veste ad dēfendendum frīgus nōn opus est, sed contrā sōlem vestiendus es. Attamen post nimium fulgur Caurus ventus plūrēs per diēs mīrum frīgus incutit, sed semper citrā gelū. Nec calōrēs conqueror. Lūsitanum vel Anglum hominem equidem crēdō, sī neque tēmētum imbibat et carne parcissimē vēscātur, (id ipsum apud Maurōs didicī,) tōtum per annum posse labōrāre salūbriter, modo per maximōs fervōrēs prūdētiā adhibeat. In hieme certē (id est, dum sōl ā merīdiē stat) sī nimium exuāris vestīmentōrum onus, ipsīs in Angliā Anglīs ad labōrem

pār eris. Spīrante Caurō post fulgura, lacernā, ac spissā quidem, carēre neutiquam potuī: ignem aliquotiēs fovēbam, sed rārō.

107. Ego autem quōdam diē quum pluvia mātūrē dēstiterat, cymbam ingredior rēmigōque nōn sine timōre circum illud prōmontorium quod caeruleam terminat rūpem. Plūrimās palmās videō, quās crēdidī ejus esse pretiōsissimī generis, quod vulgō Nux Cocus appellātur. Multae aliae arborēs fruticēsque mihi ignōtī illīc stābant, sed ipse lītoris acervus Portum meum referēbat. Tantum omnia hīc ampliōra atque ūberiōra. Dē *algā* saepius memorāvī. Aliud nōmen nōn succurrit; etenim nostrātibus virīs rēs ipsa ignōta est. Hīc dēnotō, algās illās, ut plūrimum, nōn marīnās fuisse, sed maritimās, ultrā summum aestūs terminum. Hī rēptantēs erant fruticēs, dīversī generis; hibiscōs, acanthōs, conjectūrā dīxerim. Sānē erant pulcherrimī, pūrīs distīctī foliōrum ac flōrum colōribus. 108. Dēambulō in lītore, cocōs admīror: multum cōgitō ac vēscor spē. Subitō meminī rēmōs vel optimōs ē cocī truncō fierī, scaphamque meam rēmīs carēre. Secūrim mēcum habuī. Ūnam ē minimīs cocīs statim exscindō atque obtruncō. Caput hujus in cymbam congerō, ipsam dēstinō fūne trahendam. Sed quum volō redīre, aestūs recessus mē impedit: nam circā prōmontorium, ubi fuerat mare, nunc saxa longius excurrēbant, quae metuō circumīre, nē in prōfluentem aliquam marīnam implicer. Tandem super saxīs ingrediēns, flexuōsum reperiō iter aquae, in quō cymba natāre possit. Hanc trahō, saxīs ipse īnsiliēns. Postea truncum illum super humerīs asportō per eandem viam; mox, cymbam ingressus, mē atque mea omnia domum laetus reportō.

---

## CAPUT (V.) QUINTUM.

109. Pluvia quotiēs caderet, intus mē abdidī, et in excolendā domō satis habuī operis. *Armamentarium* meum praesertim cum exultātiōne cordis aspiciēbam. Arma igniāria cūncta, rīte ēmundāta, perfricāta oleō, hāmīs ad mūrōs suspendī. Mēnsam fabrīlem suō in locō cōstituī; jūxtā hanc, repositōrium fabrīle: in angulō, ferrāmenta agrestia. Quotīdiē suum quidque in locum sevērissimē repōnō, experiētiā doctus sīc facillimē quidque invenīrī, ubi festīnātō opus est. 110. Porrō in *penāriā* ac *culīnā* multa ordināvī. Scālās quās ad cubiculum intrandum adhibēbam, compāgī cuidam ligneae per hāmōs ānulōsque sīc annexuī, ut, super hīs astāns, carnem suprà „procul fēlibus suspēnsam, possem attingere; possem quoque disjungere scālās, quotiēs vellem. Quandō mēmet objūrgō propter nimiam carnis cupīdinem, respondeō, mē ipsīs fēlibus cōnsulere, nē suum ipsae cibātum dēperdant. In penāriam cellam dōlia item atque arcās plūrēs collocāvī: aliās quidem in frūctuāriō meō. Cēterum prō culīnā sūmpseram ejusmodī cavernam, cujus in angulō erat quasi focus nātūrālis. Rīmam quandam vīdī, per quam fūmus exīre poterat: hanc ferreō vecte ampliō. Porrō forāmen majus effodiō suprà, nē fūmus per culīnam vagārētur. Exībat autem in alteram minōrem cavernam, quam prō *fūmāriō* dēstinābam. Hīc carnem suspendō, sīquam indūrātā velim. Tum fūmus, hōc modō diffūsus, minus erat mē prōditūrus: nam velut nebula in rūpe poterat vidērī. In *lignāriō* autem meō, quidquid lignī ex nāve dēportāveram, et quidquid māteriem ignis habēbat, illud omne repōnēbam. Vēla quoque hūc dēposuī, sed parum contentus locō.

111. Dē corpore cūrandō quaedam sī nārrem, ignōscet lēctor. Quae sequuntur, plūrēs ad mēnsēs, immō annōs, pertinent. Dīxī mē sub aquā marīnā, post tertium in īnsulā diem, vestēs immundās lapillīs oppressisse. Postea reputābam,—sī vel sāpōnem habērem, operae nōn fore pretium hās nostrō mōre in splendōrem recolere. Spurcitiem vestīmentōrum nōn ē colōre cōsistere, ātra essent an candida, sed ē cutis excrēmentō, quod



quidem salsā maris aquā optimē āmovērētur: manibus autem ac sāpōne fricātās, dēterī vestēs. Quāpropter hās ipsās, sōle siccātās, iterum postea induēbar. Deinde etiam simpliciōrem excōgitāvī viam.—Postquam expertus sum, vespertīna natātiō quantum reficeret corpus, dēcernō, sub sōlis occāsum ūnōquōque vespere, ipsā in tunicā, cum fēminālibus linteīs ac tībiālibus<sup>[H]</sup> (id est, tegumentīs crūrum gossypīnīs) dēnatāre in portū meō. Egressus aquā, exuor vestīmenta, contorqueō manibus, suspendō, alia induor. Illa altera māne sicca inveniō. Itaque recente semper vestītū pernoctor. Sānē per summās pluviās aegerrimē siccābantur rēs: tālī in tempestāte madidās vestēs in culīnā suspendēbam.

112. Praetereā, cutī fricandae dō operam, neque caesariem prōrsus negligō. Sciēbam enim, inter barbarōs, sī qua sit gēns sānitāte, prōcērītate, decōre corporis īsignis, hanc praesertim cutī cūrandae semper dedī; sīn autem mē illuviēī permīserō, in nūllam nōn spurcitiem posse dēlābī. Equidem ē nāve meās habēbam mappās atque mantēlia cum sūdāriīs. Mappae dētergendae corporī nimium lēvēs erant; mox in calōribus hās adhibuī ad genās prōtegendās, Arabum Scēnītārū mōre. Mantēlia, ut quae villōsa maximē, dum dūrābant, prae cēterīs approbābam.—In capillōrum supellectile nihil egomet habueram, praeter ūnum pectinem atque ūnam scōpulam sētōsam: sed totidem, quae magistrī nāvis erant, āvēxī, plūrēsq̄ nautārū pectinēs. Nautīs scōpulae nūllae erant. Scōpulās equidem magnī aestimābam; nam diffīsus sum posse reparārī. Barbae, ipsā in nāve, semper prōmittēbantur; nec in meā īnsulā mē rādēbam, quamquam habērem novāculās; sed forfice identidem tondēbam leviter aut capillōs aut barbā.

113. In tempestāte procellōsā, praesertim post fulgura, propter frīgus Caurī, quotiēs dēsisterem ab opere, lacernā induēbar, nec spernēbam ignis sōlātium. Sed tum maximē poteram labōrāre. Nova grāmina aut rādīcēs aut viridem zēam, optimā caule meliōrem, aut ligna reportābam; porrō utrumque trāmitem quō in summā rūpem ēvādēbam, comparābam in melius. Quippe rubrā super rūpem spērābam fore ut trahula tandem subīret. Quōdam diē imber superveniēns īnfulam capitis meam hūmōre saturāvit, et, tergō profūsē madidō, caurus ventus ācerrimum mihi frīgoris sēnsū incussit. Domum cucurrī magis quam incessī, mūtātisque vestīmentīs dēlīberābam. Sērica mea umbella ē nāve in prōptū erat; sed ubi manūs esse dēbērent līberae, hāc ūtī nōn possem. Inter pluviās nimium

sēnsī sōlis fervōrem, nec īnfulā potuī carēre. Hīc omnia nārrābō quae excōgitāvī, quamquam plūrēs per mēnsēs.

114. Caprārum pellēs servāveram. Sānē mollēs erant et dēlicātae. Hārum laciniās duās commodā magnitūdine abscīdī, quae prō cucullō forent. Jūnxī suprā, ā fronte usque ad occiput; inde per cervīcēs dēfluere permīsī. Ipsā in dorsī spīnā duplicēs cadēbant, contrā pluviās sōlemve umbrāculum. Caput atque adeō īnfulam comprehendēbant artē. Quoniam fēmineae quās habēbam acūs tenuēs nimis erant fragilēsque, idcirco sarcināriās adhibēbam acūs cum tenuissimīs fūniculīs: hīs satis bene cōsuēbam. Sed depserē volō internam cutem, quod quidem artificium parum cognōveram. Ego autem cinchōnam aquā dēcoxī lentō igne, ut aquae remanēret quam minimum, quam maxima autem foret ejus potentia. Mox īnfūdī in ferreum artillātōris ferculum; superpōnō pellem, ut interior pars imbibat cinchōnam. Post bīduum, longulō ac lēvī lapide, quem prō magide<sup>[I]</sup> aestimābam, oleum pice imbūtum imprimō atque īnfricō in pellem: jamque prō depstā accipiēbam.

115. Etiam summīs in calōribus vix sufficiēbat tunica,<sup>[J]</sup> nam contrā īnsectās tībiālībus<sup>[K]</sup> erat opus. Sed dorsī quoque tegumentō carēre nēquāquam conveniēbat; id quod probē sciunt Lūsitanī. Atque erat mihi sagulum Lūsitanum vel optimum, nisi quod propter nigrum calōrem radiōs sōlis imbiberet: quārē aut albīs testīs marīnīs aut spīnīs fortasse hystriceīs vellem sānē dorsum obtexere. Jam, quotiēs humerīs quidpiam portandum erat saltem asperum ac grave, suffarcināmentum dēsīderābam, nē excoriārentur ossa. Intellēxī spissā tegete esse opus, quae humerōs, sī onus portārem, dēfenderet; porrō sōlem pluviamve repelleret, nec imbiberet calōrem. 116. Tāle tegumentum dēmum contexuī, postquam juncōs cannāsque īnsulae paulō melius cognitōs habērem; neque ūllō vestīmentō superbīvī magis. Contrā calōrēs superficiem tegetis madefaciēbam; inde frīgus grātissimum mē recreābat. Item mappās ac lintea „quantum possem,” reservāns, rōscidīs foliīs callidē obvolūtīs amicior caput, ūnāque dēligō fasciā sīve taeniā. Quotiēs ex labōribus ac calōre requiēscerem in umbrā, poteram, dētractā īnfulā, crīnēs madefacere: tum vērō assūmēbam cingulum, nē in vīscera admitterem frīgus. Sīc caput frīgīdulum erat, corpus tepidum.

117. Scapham autem, mēse Decembrī nōndum fīnītō, gestiō īnstruere. Cocī truncum, quem dēportāveram, cortice exūtā, difficulter sānē secundum

longitudinem dissecāveram serrā, et in rēmōrum fōrmam magis magisque caedēbam. Etenim cymbae rēmī tamquam prō exemplāre prōstābant. Ad rēmigandam quidem scapham sex hominēs cum sex rēmīs adhibēbāmus, quattuor ad minimum. Ego, ūnus homō, duo ingentēs rēmōs mōliēns, nihil possem contrā flūctūs vel contrā prōfluentem maris facere: attamen restāgnante marī ac ventō, ūnus prope dēbilis rēmex aliquantum ūsuī foret. 118. Circā Kalendās Jānuāriās serēnissimā in tempestāte mālō vėlōque scapham īnstrūxī. Ancoram ejus cum ancorālī atque illā arcā, item tollēnōnis ferrāmenta, jamdūdum ex arēnīs recuperāveram. In portū saepius exercēbam tum vēla, tum rēmōs; hōsque in melius figūrābam. Quōrsum haec, nesciēbam equidem: enimvērō nisi perquam lēnī aurā nōn audērem exitum; sed in scaphā vidēbar quasi novam quandam tenēre vim, necnōn ipsam nāvīgandī artem inānī amōre fovēbam. Mox operae, quam prius in scaphā nāvāveram, diffīsus, iterum carīnam sarcīvī. Ubicumque rīmās metuō, argillam pice oblitum firmissimē īnferciō, dōnec omnia vidērentur tūtissima.

119. At marīnās prōfluentēs, sī quae essent requiēscente ventō, volēbam propter scaphae salūtem cognōscere. Hās ut explōrārem, clēmentissimō sub ventō, ulterius „merīdiem versus,” in cymbā prōcessī. Ecce autem, quandō duo amplius mīllia eram ā terrā, jugum montis longē altius quam excelsus ille collis ā quō ter, quater prōspexeram. Ab hōc monte terram opīnābar sēnsim dēsīdēre usque ad hortōs meōs. Jam videō, sī īnsulam ac maria rēctē prōspectāre vellem, montem illum esse cōnscendendum; idque meditor. Postēā recordor, mē ipsō ā colle eundem vīdisse montem, sed tantam esse ejus altitudinem tunc nōn suspicātum. 120. Quamquam neque mītēs vellem ferās timōre meī implēre, neque prōdigere nitrātum pulverem, dēcernō tamen exercendam esse jaculandī artem, nē oblīvīscar, nēve ipsa arma rōbīgine corrumpantur. Versicolōrēs quidem avēs, quālēs ferē inveniēbam, vix mē fugiēbant; sed aquāticae quaedam volucrēs, nostrīs nōn valdē dissimilēs, omnī āstūtiā ac metū ēvādēbant mē. Hās crēdidī advenās esse, assuētāsque hominibus: praecipuam eārum sēdem postēā cōnspicātus sum. Ego autem hās prō cibō et propter tēlī exercitātiōnem occīdō. Anatēs erant, ānserēs, olōrēs, plūmīs fōrmīsque nōn omnīnō nostrārum ad īnstār, porrō plūrium inter sē generum. Hās, ut plūrimum, plumbulīs in ōrā tantum maritimā petēbam, nē tēlī fragor cēterās terrēret ferās: canis autem, sīve in terram sīve in aquam dēciderent, ācerrimē eās reportābat. Sī prōtinus comedere nōn placēret, nec egērem quō canem pāscerem, in fūmāriō

suspendēbam. Quippe fūmus et mātūrābat carnem et putrēdinem āvertēbat. Assae potius quam aquā coctae mihi placēbant; sed carbōnem, Anglōrum mōre, altē exstruere nequīvī. Suprā ignem assāre necesse erat: quārē ālitem, membrātīm concīsum, fīlīs ferreīs, tamquam verubus, trājectum, vīvās suprā prūnās ambūrēbam.

121. Eōdem ferē tempore columbās quāsdam facillimē nancīscor. Dum colle regredior obambulāns, ālārū strīdōrem audiō: mox conversus volātum quasi columbārū agnōscō. Hae avēs in cavum saxī locum sē recēpēre, quem oculīs facile notāvī, crēdidīque mē posse illūc ascendere. Postquam cūncta conjectandō ēmēnsus sum, virgam arboris ꝓabscissam prō signō, terrae īnfīgō: tum domum redeō meditāns. Quantum possum celerrimē columbāriam cellam, perlevem illam quidem, compangō: hanc humerō portāns eundem locum repetō, post bīduum. Virga illa ēminēns fit index; saxum ascendō, plūrēsque in cavīs inveniō nīdōs, quibus ōva nōndum inerant. Ūnum nīdum in columbāriam meam cellam trānsferō; mox advolāvit columba, intrāvitque cellam nīdum repetēns. Id gaudeō, et relinquo cellam. Post plūrēs diēs reversus avem nīdō īnsidentem inveniō: quam ipsā cum cellā mōtū clēmētissimō reportō domum; atque illa intrepida manēbat. Coniunx postea subsecūtus est: ambōbus, ut poteram, quotīdiē dabam cibātum. Postea turriculam cōnfēcī columbāriam, columnae innīxam, sēcūritātis ergō: nec pullōs volēbam mactāre, sed in spem ampliōris prōlis reservābam.

122. Cibī quidem satis superque mihi erant, sī modo convehere possem. Sed quō magis rūminor, labōrem dēportandōrum frūctuum horreō magis. Haedōs in praesaepe redūxeram, nē grāminibus quoque congerendīs dēfatīgārer; tamen ꝓillā in convalle dēpressā, oneribus gravābar, neque trahulam poteram adhibēre, propter novārū herbārū luxuriem. Dē tractōriīs jūmentīs paene dēspērāvī, vidēbarque in servitūtem labōriōsissimam dēvōtus; sīn requiem captō, prōtinus mēns fīēbat miserior.

123. Accēdēbat quod calceāmentīs dēficiēbar. Nautae super nāve aut nūdīs pedibus aut tenuissimīs soleīs agēbant. Caligās ego et magister nāvis habēbāmus, sed ego magnitūdine pedum superābam. Porrō saepius ex necessitāte mare ingredientī, corium caligārū sē contrāxerat. Ego autem post trēs labōriōsōs diēs, pedibus aeger, nōlēbam exīre. Omnium rērum mē taedēbat. Nova lūna jam intrāverat. Axem ego quadrātam coepī incīdere, īnscrīptiōnem quasi sepulcrī dēsīgnāns. Tālis erat:

REBILIUS CRŪSŌ,

*Anglōrum cīvīs,  
Maurōrum captīvus,  
Braziliēnsis colōnus,  
Hīc naufragus sōlitārius,  
Hominum miserrimus,  
Quīntum jam mēnsem ēnecor.*

Illud iterāvī ter quaterque, *hominum miserrimus*. At subitō vōcem quandam sēnsī, nōn auribus, sed corde: “Tūne omnium miserrimus? Tū, quī summā pāce frueris, in pulcherrimā ūberrimāque īnsulā, sānō validōque corpore! At nē tē Deus Maurīs iterum praedam prōjiciat vel morbō feriat!” 124. Cohorruī. Tum reputābam: “Anne hoc illud est, quod vātēs sacrī summā in sōlitūdine afflātum Deī quaerēbant? Numne igitur mē

quoque intrat ille afflātus?” Mīrē profectō agitābar. Dein mēmet increpuī: “Ō fatue Rebilī, sānae nōn es mentis. Imāgināriā sapientiā vērāque dēlīrātiōne capiēris, sī dīvīnam crēdēs tē audīre vōcem.” Prōtenus velut dēmortuus hominibus, vīvus necessāriē cōram Creatōre meō, mīrā quādam ac novā audentiā illum compellābam, et quasi vōtum concipiō. “Ō Suprēme! quisquis es (inquam), nimius tū es mihi: pavēscō fānāticam dēmentiam. Sed dulcem redde hominum aspectum; tum prūdentius tē cognōverō, plēnius venerābor.” Post haec tranquillior fiēbam: sed periculōsa esse sēnsī intervālla industriae, nisi oblectātiōne aliquā sōlārer. Quārē pictam avem psittacum, sī possim, capere ac mānsuēfacere dēcernō, sī forte mēcum colloquātur. Dē macacō<sup>[L]</sup> cōgitāveram; sed timuī hās bēstiās, nē malignō forent ingeniō: sānē aliōrum generum aliī sunt mōrēs: itaque hoc cōnsilium dēposuī.

125. Mox leporēs quoque volō capere. Quippe saepius captāveram, neque ars mea prōcesserat. Leporēs illī (seu rēctius cunīculī: ita crēdō: sed quia carō leporem potius referēbat, idcirco ex primā illā nocte leporēs semper appellāveram;) attamen gallīnārum domesticārum mōre sē gerēbant. Quam proximē sinēbant mē adīre, tangere nōn sinēbant; sed in cava terrae prōrumpentēs, inde mē intuēbantur. Laqueōs īnstrūxeram plūrēs, sed frūstrā: jam piscandō experiendum esse arbitror. Super nāve flagra aliquot rōbusta erant, quae (nam fatendum est) ad flagellandōs nigrītās comportābāmus, sī ratiō tulisset. Hōrum tria offenderam, āvēxīque propter lōrōrum ūsūs. Nunc ūnīus in fine hāmum piscātōrium grandīōrem affīgō. 126. Virgam quoque praeparō tamquam piscātōriam, sed brevīōrem, resticulā īnstrūctam: huic fasciculum tenerārum herbārum adnectō. Trēs sacculōs super humerō

portāns cum virgā flagrōque, leporum adeō locōs. Sinistrā fasciculum jactāns, ad lūdum alliciō. Post paulō lepus incipit, ut fēlium catulī, persequī fasciculī cursum ac grāmina ejus subinde rōdere. Flagrum ego dextrā tenēns, opportunitātem reī gerendae opperior, subitōque prōjectō hāmō, super caudā leporem opprimō. Cōnfestim arreptum attineō, sacculōque immersum. Tantōs ille ciet strepitūs, ut cēterī accurrant mīrābundī; dumque obstupēscunt, alterum verbere hāmī assequor. Animadvertō marem esse ac fēminam; quārē satis habeō, laetusque dēvehō praedam. Sub rūpe ubi cava loca abundābant, crēdō nōn male habitātūrōs; postea ad mānsuēficiendōs operam adhibuī.

126\* Dē calceāmentīs pauca sunt explicanda. Quoniam labāscēbant omnium caligārum coria, sēnsī validiōre esse opus tegumentō pedum: idque juncīs ac lentā quādam cortice plicātīs concinnāvī. Ē juncīs, quōs ,dīversī generis plūrimōs, in sōle siccāveram, eōs dēligō quī lentī simul et relūcentēs vidērentur: nam quidquid relūcēret, id caunārum mōre pluviās optimē rejectūrum crēdidī. Ex hīs plicāvī marsūpium, cuius fōrma erat pedis īnstar ā convexō ad calcem praecīsī. Dein ē corticibus, quās mācerāveram, lōra plicāvī, lāta minus duo digitōs. Veterum caligārum fundum vel soleam sub marsūpiō illō positum, dum pēs meus inerat, lōrīs illīs circumligāvī, nōdāvīque super tālō. Rudis sānē hic calceus erat, attamen aliquātenus certē pedem prōtēxit vulneribus. Nōn absurdum erit hīc dīcere, mē ipsā in Brazīliā contrā īnsectās saepe Persicōs gestāsse socculōs, ē tapēte factōs. Per hōs nōn possunt culicēs mordēre, sed spīnae sentēsque facile penetrant.

---

## CAPUT (VI.) SEXTUM.

127. Circā Īdūs Jānuāriās ad montem explōrandum accingor. Lacernam capiō cibumque, sī forte pernoctārī opus sit. Mollissimōs induor calceōs: *prōspeculum* adnectō balteō. Adsūmō canem. Sed ante exortum sōlem ēdūcō haedōs, et (quod mōris meī erat) commodō in locō paxillīs dēstinō. Tum ex convalle dextrōrsum surgēns juxtā aquam dēsiliētem pergō, saltum versus meum. Sed ascendō jugum, quō lātius prōspectem, saltumque subtus in laevā faciō. Modica erat acclīvitās, sed continua. Sub soleā mihi breve erat grāmen,—molle, frīgidulum, nōn impediēns. Quō magis īnsurgēbam, largior erat aura ac plēna vigōris. Facile liberēque incēdēbam. Dextrā, caprōrum videō scopulōs ac pāscua; sed ad sinistram magnō flexū redeō, dein convallem flūminis nōtam attineō suprā, moxque hortōs meōs. Hōs simul ac praeterīveram, sinistrōrsum lēnī dēflexū contendēbam, incēpīque ipsum montem oblīquē ascendere. Jamque intellēxī, longē facilius hōc cursū „quamvīs longō„ hortōs adīrī; nam propter aurās montānās, siccius solum, breviōrēs herbās, nōn modo nōn dēfessus, immō recreātus sum itinere. Ubi aquula quaedam ā monte dēsilit, canis incipit lambere. Sīc monitus, cibīs communicātis, vēscor bibōque. 128. Ut prīmum monte dē summō prōspexī, praegestiēns cūncta admīror. Valdē praeceps erat mōns occidentem ac Septentriōnēs versus, id est, ad mare. Ipsa aetheris clāritās extentusque Ōceanus pulcherrima erant. At ego propius circumspectō alterum in latus, unde clēmētissimē surgēbat tanta altitūdō, illam vallem lūstrātūrus in quā superne hortī erant meī. Penitus dēspicere nequīvī, sed per oppositōs clīvōs cursum ejus usque ad mare indāgō. Aestus tunc quam maximē recesserat; laetus tamen animadvertō rīvum sē in mare effundentem, duōsque „quasi hujus tribūtāriōs„ dē dīversīs rīpīs rīvulōs, quōrum utervīs scapham meam possit excipere. Per prōspeculum dispiciēns, facile vīdī palmās astāre praegrandēs „ostium rīvī versus„ et paene ad ōram maris. Postquam illāc satiāvī oculōs, conversus in aliam terrae regiōnem aspectō. Vasta hīc subjecta est silva usque ad ultimum īnsulae lītus. Dēclīvitās modica erat, nec continua: quīndecim mīllia silvae ad minimum haec aestimābam. Nē

prōspeculī quidem ope ultimārum poteram arborum nātūrā cognōscere, cēterum proximae ultimaque valdē erant dissimilēs. Ad Aquilōnēs Juga Caprīna (sīc enim nōminābam) scaenam conclūdēbant, sed mare superēminēbat. 129. Haec dum commeditor, prōspectōque circumcercā, repente terram ē longinquō videor vidēre merīdiem versus. Dispiciō, anne sit nebula. Etiam atque etiam contemplor: dēmum agnōscō lātissimē porrēctam terram, valdē humilem, sed terram tamen. Prīmō mē spē illud ac gaudiō affēcit. Continentem Americae merīdiānam esse prōnūntiō: mox fateor, nihil id ad mē. Etenim tālis regiō sōlitūdō est vastior, foedior, immānior longē quam haec est īnsula. Fac abesse barbarōs hominēs panthērāsque; at illīc sī forem, aut in lātissimā atque inhūmānā arēnā prōjicerer, aut (quod crēdō potius) in aggeribus silvōsīs maximī alicujus fluvīi, inter palūdēs immēnsās atque īnsalūberrimōs vapōrēs. Sānē haec īnsula prae continente illā tamquam Paradīsus est. 130. Retorqueō oculōs meum versus rēgnum, contentus, laetiorque; tum dīrēctā incipiō viā dēscendere, dōnec tōta mihi vallis patet. Mox hortōs meōs cōnsīderāns, fruticēs observō grossulāriīs<sup>[M]</sup> nōn dissimilēs, quibus propiōrēs clīvī distinctī sunt. Hōs versus dīrigō gradum. Magis magisque ūvidum inveniō hoc latus jugī, velut spongiam; id quod rīvum perennem prōmittit, herbīs pluviālem aquam multōs per mēnsēs sustentantibus. Fruticēs autem illī in sicciōre stābant ōrā, quamquam prope ad ūmida. Vītēs recognōscō, et ūvās crēdō posse suā in tempestāte hinc dēferri. Porrō crūda mālā citrea colligō plūra līmōnāsque ad dēliciās bibendī.

131. Regredior paulātīm dēscendēns, dōnec ad jūctūrā vallium pertingō. At ipsō in laevō vallis latere quasi viam nātūrālem caespite obductam cōspicor, quae dēclīvitāte perquam modicā „saltum versus meum„ dūcit. Per hanc libet dēgredi. Nusquam minus decem pedēs lāta erat. Suprā ad laevam, īfrā ad dextram, clīvus satis arduus erat, herbīs multōrum generum abundāns, sed in fundō arboribus cōnsitus dēnsissimīs. Agnōvī prōtinus, facillimē posse in trahulā meā ex hortīs hāc viā frūctūs ad rūpēs super cavernīs dēvehī; nam caespes erat brevis, dūrissimō in solō atque (ut arbitrābar) calcāriō; jamque ūnō in cōnspectū prope tria mīllia viae hujus patēbant. Dēambulāns alacer, saltum tandem meum in laevā praetereō, mox dēsilientem illum rīvulum assequor, videōque nōn posse trahulam sine ponte hāc trānsīre. Sed tālem pontem nōn magnī esse operis jūdicō.



132. Praeclārum sānē vidēbātur hujus diēi iter. Laetus, atque idcirco liberālior, trīticō atque hordeō Eurōpaeō columbās largiter pāscō. Hās frūgēs „in sacculīs conditās, ē nāve asportāveram, sed parvī aestimābam; nunc columbīs largior. Neque umquam sānē hās avēs neglēxī, sed inter famulōs reputāns, plūs minusve cibī impertiēbam. 133. In ūniversum aestimantī, trēs partēs „nātūrā dīversās, īnsula exhibēbat,—fructiferam, sterilem, silvestrem. Sterilia ac sicca Caprīnum opīnor Jugum collēsque vel grūmōs inde porrēctōs usque ad portum meum: ultrā Jugum quidnam fuerit, nōndum vīderam. Spatiō longē minimō fortasse erat fructifera; sed ubi tantae silvae, ibi frūgēs aliquandō esse possent.

134. Equidem postquam sēnsī quantō cum labōre rādīcēs ēsculentās ē convalle humerīs portem, placuit cymbā dēvehere, sī cum aestū maris flūmen ascendere possem. Quōdam diē hōs propter ūsūs solitō mātūrius illātenus ascenderam, ubi quaedam humō nāscētia colligerem; tum, nisi contrā aestum mē dēfatīgāre vellem, duās ferē hōrās erat cōsīdendum. Quārē cymbā trānsgressus flūmen, regiōnem ex Occīdente oppositam explōrō. Ōstium versus flūminis valdē praeceps erat rīpa, sed ubi aestus maris dēsinit, lēniōrem habēbat clīvum. Collis calcārius esse vidēbātur, alterī illī super cavernīs meīs simillimus. 135. Simul ac culmen attigī, mare versus omnia esse praecipitia intellegō. In brevibus herbīs prōstrātus, caput ultrā marginem rūpis prōtendō, ejusque rādīcēs subtus videō undīs etiamnum lavārī. Ulterius ad Septentriōnēs surgēbat mōns īnsulae ille altissimus, quam explōrāveram. Celeriter ea vīdī quae maximī erant, redeōque properus. 136. Vix attingō cymbam, atque trēs cōspicor psittacōs in rāmīs cōsīdentēs. Flagrum arripiō (id erat in cymbā), item illicō virgam dēcīdō. Concitātiōre flagrī verbere psittacum assequor, hāmōque dēprehendō. Rōstrum ejus metuēns, sarmentō oculōs meōs prōtegēbam. Ille autem subitō dolore territus, prōrsus exiit fortitūdinem, neque valdē reluctābātur. Itaque sarmentō, quod in laevā tenēbam, caput ejus opprimō, mox pede inculcō sarmentum, expeditōque cultellō ūnam plūmam circumcīdō. Nē longus sim, fūniculō attentum dēvehō domum, asperiōre captūrā nihil gravius perpassum. Fūne pede dēligō, perticā ad īnsidendum datā. Facilius id vidēbātur, quam caveam ē cancellīs facere.

137. Ego autem captīvīs leporibus cōsulēns, dōlium quoddam ē perfractīs trānsennā īnstrūxeram: hīc in cavō rūpis dēgēbant. Fīmus caprīnus, quem ē stabulō ēgererem, in sicciōre humō appositus, locōs

praeparābat in quibus caespitēs herbāsque leporibus dīlētās dēfoderem. Leporēs summā cūrā pāscō ac mānsuēfaciō.

138. Sed in nārrātiōne meā paulum nunc regredi opus est. Ut mē oblectārem, saepius librum sūmēbam; aliās mathēmaticum illum, quī teneram cūrā primī meī atque optimī patrōnī revocābat; aliās geōgraphicum. Hinc quōdam diē dē Indīs ēdiscō, quam prūdentē ferōs elephantōs mānsuēfaciant. Equidem dē caprīs meīs ad trahulam jungendīs cōgitāveram, sed nōndum grandēs erant: hārum autem opperīrī aetātem, longum vidēbātur. Jam, hīs perlēctīs, crēdidī, posse caprum ferum pariter ac ferum elephantum ad quamlibet aptārī disciplīnam, cuius quidem ipsiūs nātūra, foret capāx: cūncta in eō vertī, ut feram in manū tenērēs. 139. Rē ponderātā, dēmum ēgressus sum, certus dēpugnandī. Duās succingor pistolās, quibus mē in extrēmīs prōtegā; sed restibus laqueīsque sum frētus. Laqueīs duōbus tribulōs ferreōs, sī rēctē rem nōminō, validissimē annexueram. Tribulī autem tālī erant nātūrā, ut, hominis pede oppressī, trīna spīcula in solō dēfīgerent. In rētīcula herbās comportābam eās quās maximē dēligēbant caprī. Canem domī cōstringō, atque sīc armātus sēdēs petō caprīnās. Plūrēs ibi videō caprās atque haedōs; mox caprum quendam grandem ac rōbustum contemplor, (vix minor erat quam bonus asinus) quī vīribus cōnfīsus seorsum agēbat. Hunc adeō, herbās suāvissimās porrigēns. 140. Ille autem neque territus neque īrātus, accēdit rōditque libenter. Herbās in humum prōjiciō, dumque pāscitur, laqueōs cum tribulīs super cornibus impōnō. Tribulum ūnum pede pressum humī īnfīgō; dein, antequam sentiat, inculcō alterum quoque, et sub pede attineō. Prōtinus gnārus sē illigātum, in posteriōribus crūribus sē ērigit, sūrsum capite nītēns: ego autem tertiō laqueō pedēs ejus primōrēs involvō. In eō erat ut alterum extraheret tribulum, quāndō artē cōstrictīs primōribus pedibus, quōs in āere habēbat, ego asperrimē trūdēns dējiciō eum in latus. Cōnsīdō in armum, inculcāns cornū. Ille autem sīc dēpressō capite pedibusque correptīs, onus violentissimē dētrectābat, sed nequībat excutere. Ego nōn invītus sinō eum sē dēfatīgāre calcitrantem, sūbulamque<sup>[N]</sup> grandem ac lōrum expediō. 141. Summā in tranquillitāte labrum ejus superius perfodiō, atque īnserō lōrum, quod ānulī īnstar concinnō, plūriēs nōdātum. Tribulīs novō in locō dēfīxīs, amplius paulō libertātis pedibus ejus permittō, ut amplius sē dēfatīget frūstrā connītendō. Tandem dēfessus, sūdōre perfūsus, requiēscit. Herbīs in reticulum recollēctīs, surgō; convellō tribulōs, appendōque cervīcī ejus; tum

labrō trahō lēniter. Is, dolōre gemēns, ērēxit sē, invītusque sequēbātur, pedibus etiamnum cōstrictīs, sed nōn adductē. 142. Sīc quīnquāgintā forsitan passūs eum dēdūxī. Tum subitō reluctābātur; sed dolōre labrī percitus, cornū mē feriēbat: id vērō facile caveō, lōrō subtrahēns; simul, iterum adductō laqueō, praepediō crūra. Sānē ille tōtus contremīscere, praeteritōrum memor et posthāc mē sequitur oboedientissimē: quod simul atque animadvertō, porrigō herbās ante nārēs. Nōlēbat rōdere, sed odōrem libēns captābat; jamque facile eum in saltum meum dēdūcō. Ibi arborī firmiter alligātum famē parō expugnāre. Porrō id nūllius erat labōris; etenim postquam haedōs jūxtā affīxeram, mixtā crūdēlitāte et clēmētiā mox plēnissimē est domitus.

143. Explōrātō, posse feram sīc subigī, post aliquot diēs capram pariter aggressus, hanc quoque vel facilius dēdūxī. Duo haedī grandēs ac paene adultae mātrem ad praesaepe volentēs secūtae sunt; tum novā veterī admixtā catervā cito maerēre dēstitit. Itaque grex meus jam caprum habēbat ac capram, item trēs haedōs duāsque juvencās caprās. Ego vērō cūctōs incipiō trahulā cōsuēfacere. Difficile sānē est rēs gestās ōrdine statō nārārē. Quippe perpetuō variābantur labōrēs meī, neque umquam ūnō quasi nīsū ūllum opus perfēcī, sed particulātīm operābar, seu tempestāte caelī mōtus, seu phantasiā, vel subitō aliquid recordāns; et sīquid parum bene valēre crēderem, reficiēbam in melius. Dē piscātiōne meā mox sum dictūrus. Sīc, inter labōrēs multōs et ōtiī paulum, praeteriēre mēnsēs.

144. Circā Kalendās Aprīlēs, ut crēdō, imber mātūtīnus (dē quō memorāvī) largior et almiior cecidit. Mīrum inde vigōrem nacta sunt omnia quae gignit humus, mīramque ego ipse voluptātem percēpī. Exspatiandum dēcernō. Ad speculam meam (dē quā ante memorāvī) ēnīsus, prōgredior ut lītus ad Orientem amplius cognōscerem. Duo mīllia fortasse passūs prōcesseram, quum viam quandam *Lūnātam* videō (sī sīc licet appellāre), quae flexū continuō, acclīvitāte modicā, ab ōrā maris palmārum ferācī ad culmen hujusce regiōnis dūcēbat. Jam praeter ōram maritimam duo numerābam prōmontoria duōsque sinūs: nunc *Tertium* hunc appellō sinum. 145. Cēterīs in rēbus prīmō nihil novī exhibēbātur, nisi quod arēnae extendēbantur lātissimae. Plūribus hās rēbus distīctās vidēbam. Expeditō prōspeculō, marīnās dispiciō testās,—immō testūdīnēs,—dīversissimās magnitūdine. Id quidem gaudeō. Porrō hōc in sinū palmae ita dominābantur, ut vix quidquam aliud inter arborēs dēsUPER vīderim. Palūdēs autem

longiōrēs in rūpibus continuābantur suprā palmās illās. Ut explōrem cūncta propius, palūde quādam nōn facile circuitā, dēscendō ad ōram maris. Tria palmārum genera agnōscō, flectō sēnsim ad sinistram, dēnum Lūnātā illā viā domum redeō. 146. Postea mēcum excutiēns, cūr in portū meō cactī optimē crēscerent, palmārum nihil esset; colligō, quia palūdēs apud mē super rūpibus nōn sint, idcirco neque cocōs neque aliās palmās nāscī. 147. Jam dē grege quotīdiāna mē incessit cūra, ignārum quid sānitātī necessārium foret, et quantus ac quālis hujus aestātis calor. Multa fēcī, mox infecta reddidī; quae nārrāre nōn opus est. In saltū meō novum praesaepe meditābar. Sed haedōs nōn effugitūrōs crēdō, retentīs caprō capraeque; igitur solvō. Canis autem tunc mēcum erat, ipsum ad saltum. Is, simul ut haedī excurrere in prāta coepērunt, novā libertāte gestientēs, ipse lūdī fit particeps: quippe collūsōrem diū nōn habuerat. Tum mihi aspectus sānē erat jūcundissimus. 148. Caper, immō capra, ut crēdō, brevī in curriculō plērōsque canēs vēnaticōs superat, sed canī perdūrat vėlōcitās. Ipsae sē haedī tam pernīcēs ostendēbant, ut nōn sine magnā contentiōne canis eās praeverterit. Neque volēbant effugere; nam iterum iterumque redībant. Ego vērō omnium hilaritāte exhilarātus, increpō mēmet, quod cicurēs animantēs tam innocentī voluptāte prīvāverim.

149. Caprōs hōs dictitō; attamen nēquāquam erant nostrātium caprōrum ad normam. Antilopās equīnōs vel ὄρυγας fortasse quis illōs appellāverit. Cervīx hōrum carnōsa et arcuāta, armus amplus plānusque, equum generōsum referēbat. Pellis brevissimō dēlicātissimōque villō sive lānūgine, colōre mustēlīnō, vestiēbātur; neque saeta inerat neque pilus, praeterquam in jubā atque in maris barbā. Juba ferē tōta in ipsō sēdit armō. Lacertōsiōrēs erant quam dāmae fulvae; ferō potius cervō comparāverim. Cētera erant rotunda, bene compācta; crūra autem gracilia, ex osse dēnsissimō. Os frontis valdē rōbustum crēdidī. Cornua nōn recurva, sed propiōra taurīnīs; id quod arcuātae cervīcī crēdēbam aptius. Caprae cornua divergēbant aliquantum. 150. Antehāc cūnctōs in trahulā exercueram, sed sine pondere: pondus nūdō dorsō saepius impōnēbam: nunc caprō capraeque quotīdiānum labōrem adjūdicō, sī rēctē possim apparāre. Retinācula fūnālia trahulae adaptāveram, sed collāre tractōrium longē erat difficilīus. Quidquid compēgeram, rudius esse sēnsī: id enim erat agendum, ut nē pulmōnem onus opprimeret. Vīdī tamen armōs cervīcemque equīnīs esse tam compariā, ut sī male rēs cessisset, artifex culpandus foret, nōn animal. Nihilōminus totiēs male rem gessī, ut dēstiterim amplius hāc in viā cōnārī.

Fūnēs dēmum meōs circum frontem, cornibus sustentātōs, composuī; id quod sī nōn optimē, at satis bene cōnfēcit rem.

151. Ligna quae superne ad rūpis marginem convēxī, ꝑut plūrimum, dēvolvō, trahulā suprà relictā. Ferē quotīdiē post finītum imbrem haedōs cum cane submittō in clīvīs lūsūrōs. Valdē mihi placēbat, quod canis circumcurrere et circumscribere eās, pāstōricī canis mōre, magis in diēs discēbat. Ego autem, sī longiusculē abesse vidērentur, jubēbam: “īret, redūceret:” quod quidem ille, quasi probē intellegēns, cōnfestim faciēbat. Porrō grex ipse canem dīligere vidēbātur. Jam spērābam nōn necesse fore ut hās vincīrem, quae ferae libertātis nōn recordārentur. 152. Aliud quoque mox excōgitāvī. Ex virgulā quādam, puerōrum nostrōrum mōre, cavātā ac terebrātā, fistulam cōnfēcī. Hāc clārē canēbam quotiēs gregem eram pāstūrus: immō, sī in viā inter trahendum caprō forem vēscendī factūrus cōpiam, fistulā antea sēdulō sonābam; neque umquam eōs frūstrābar, sed post illum cantum, aut cibātum illīs aut pōtum fidēlissimē afferēbam. Inde factum est, ut sonō fistulae libentissimē accurrerent. 153. Dē cibō meō restat aliquid nārrandum. Pānem nauticum ac farīnam ē nāve eō magis cōnsūmēbam, quia verēbar nē mūcēscerent. Videō autem, sī Summī Nūminis dēcrētō hīc diūtius mihi sit dēgendum, domesticīs opus esse cōpiīs. Quidquid herbārum, arōmatis, frūctuumve condiat cibōs, sī nec ponderōsum sit et cōnservārī queat, id fateor ā longinquō nōn male importārī: sed quidquid sit quō vēscar praesertim, hoc omne sub meā esse manū oportēre crēdō. Igitur agellum vel angulum potius in portū dioscōreīs dēstināveram, sī humum idōneam afferre possem. Siccātae carnis paululum restābat, neque id jūcundum. Leporem, praeter prīmum illud ā cane, nōn gustāveram; sed piscēs facile capiō,—id quod explicandum est. 154. Prīmō līneā hāmīs īnstrūctā piscābar, sed hujus valdē taedēbat mē. Postea pōne cymbam parvum verriculum trahēbam, quod identidem scrūtābar, plūrēsq̄e hōc modō piscēs capiēbam. Mox alia succurrit ratiō,—ut ōstium portūs verriculīs trājicerem; idque fēcī, quamvīs difficile erat valida ferrāmenta in scopulōs illōs (*Postēs* quōs dīxī) īnfīgere. Clāvōs spīcātōs ē ferrō optimō postquam satis acuī, malleō artillātōris sīc impēgī, ut angustās rīmās inter saxa exsculperem: hūc adēgī ferrāmenta, quibus rētia innīterentur. 155. Aestus alluēbat piscēs, quōrum aliquot saltem numquam nōn relinquebantur in verriculīs. Interdum magna vīs capiēbātur; tunc maritimae avēs per rētia irruentēs mēque et praedam meam vexābant. Quoniam ꝑcorticibus sublāta, natārent verricula, piscēs attinēbantur sub aquā, quae profunda erat in ōstiō.

Itaque hoc meum aestimō esse *vīvārium*, unde piscēs, quotiēs velim, nōn magnō labōre capiō. Magnum mihi labōrem attulerant verricula; sed animum meum, dē cibātū canis fēliumque ānxium, sōlābantur.

156. Profectō quandō dē meīs labōribus mēcum reputō, illa mihi interdum subit animum contemplātiō, anne, sī optimus parēns, ut erat tenerrimus, sīc sagāx fuisset meaeque intellegēns indolis, posset forsan mē domī apud sē tenēre, contentum atque beātum. Nae, sī probē mē nōsset, nōn in Anglicārum lēgum studia,—semper ārida, jejūna, saepissimē praeposterā,—incumbere mē voluisset; sed impigrum ac strēnuum aliquod opus, ubi oculus manusque viget, tālī commendāset filiō. Poteram autem patriae lītora vel agrum lātius pervagārī, parentibus nōn dērelictīs. Etenim meminī, quandō eram in Brazīliā, quamdiū nova erat opera, mīrā mē vehementiā eam semper persecūtum esse. Nempe ut fortis equus īre vult, sed quōrsum aut quārē, nescit; sīc impetū quōdam ad agendum īnstīgābar, nūllō satis certō āctiōnis fīne prōpositō: itaque, rem quampiam assecūtus, simul fastīdiēbam. Nec ūlla profundior causa in fūnestam illam et scelerātam nāvigātiōnem mē prōpulit, ex quā in exilium trīstissimum et labōriōsissimum sum dētrūsus.

---

## CAPUT (VII.) SEPTIMUM.

157. Dē capiendīs piscibus memorāvī: dē coquinandīs addō pauca. Octo decemve piscēs, vel pauciōrēs sī grandēs erant, rapidō igne leviter ēlixābam, tum pinnās,—id est, tōta latera,—capita, caudās, fēlibus meīs reservābam. Magnā spīnā extractā, cēteram carnem aut super crāticulā leviter torrēbam, aut cum fabīs vel grānō admiscēbam prō canis cibātū. Equidem in verriculō saepius marīna animālia inveniēbam, quālia nēmō piscēs nōmināverit: porrō piscium genus valdē carnōsum, quod magnī aestimābam, squātinīs nostrīs simillimum. Illud addō: sī vellem, poteram facillimē grallātōriās avēs quae inter cautēs aut ipsō in portū piscābantur, igne dējectās capere: sed carnem piscōsam fore crēdidī, pulveris nitrātī dispendiō male ēmptam.

158. Farīnā autem ēlixā cum piscibus vēscēbar prīmō; mox Arabum mōre assās placentās faciēbam. Nempe, combustīs super ferreā lāminā vel plānō saxō lignīs, prūnās submovēbam; placentās ūdās in calidā superficiē positās sub patellā ferreā obtegēbam: huic iterum superingerēbam prūnās. Placentae subter, velut in furnō, coquēbantur: sed fermentāre placentās nesciēbam. 159. Dē hīs hāctenus. Cēterum dē pulchritūdine rērum quae domicilium meum cingēbant, nōn eram incūriōsus. In flōribus aut foliīs sī quid excelleret, plūriēs reportāvī aut rādīcem aut sarmentum, quod dēfoderem in cavernārum vīcīniā. Summā in aestāte cocī nucem, quae suā ex arbore dēciderat, reportāvī mēcum, plēnē mātūrā crēdēns; mox ipsō in portū meō serendam dēcrēvī. Etenim sīc commentābar mēcum: “sī properē in Angliam āvehar, numquam mē paenitēbit hanc sēvisse arborem, plūrium fortasse parentem, aliōrum hominum domicilium ōrnātūrā: sīn hāc in īnsulā dētinear ultrā biennium, gaudēbō arbusculam vidēns surgentem.” Sēdulō dēlēgī locum serendī, congesīque humum ūberrimam; statuō irrigandam esse dīligentissimē. 160. Post diem sānē labōriōsum, dum sub astrīs vēscor et bibō, antequam mē in aquārum lavācrum committam, mīror quamnam ob rem mē tantopere fatīgem. “Anne, Ō fatue Rebilī, nihil tibi esse operis

putās? Timēsne, nē facile nimis vīvēns, socordiā opprimāris?” Tum respondeō: (etenim mōris meī erat, multa clārē loquī. Nisi hoc fēcissem, patriae linguae forem oblītus: immō ipsum mentis acūmen hebetātum foret. Sed prope omnia mea difficiliōra cōsilia, plēnā ōrātiōne prōnūntiandō, dēfīniēbam magis et cōsummābam.) Itaque respondeō: “Cibus, vestis, domicilium, vītā asservant hominis; sed pulchritūdō beātā facit vītā. Ad portum meum adōrnandum, in honōrem ejus et pulchritūdinem, cocum nucem cēterāsque rēs cōsēvī.” Extemplō etiam clārius, “Ōh fatue Rebilī! (inquam) hominum neutiquam miserrimus es tū, quī adōrnandō domiciliō dās operam.”

161. Aliam rem, absurdum forsitan, nōn absurdum erit lēctōrī commūnicāre. Quārtō diē postquam cocum īnsēvī, longius dūrate pluviā, tempus computābam, inveniōque nātālī mātis diē mē illam sēvisse nucem. Mox memini, quam incertum sit, vīvatne māter an mortua sit. Mīrē tangēbar et tenerā perfundēbar memoriā. Tum quia plūrēs nōveram vel audīveram, quī praesāgium mortis alicujus sē habuisse crēderent, hoc mihi ipsī mātis mortem ōminārī vidēbātur. Etenim jam fassus sum, mē, simul ac opere cessārem, maestum saepius ēvāsisse frāctumque animō. 162. Quandō mē ineptiarum incūsō, respondeō, “fortasse nōn esse ineptum.” Nam sī restituat mē Deus in patriam, tum aut gaudēbō vīvam inveniēns mātrem, aut rēctissimē praecēperō dēbitam maestitiā. Sīn numquam restituar, sed sōlitārius peream, minus sum inhūmānus, minus ab omnibus necessitūdībus abruptus, quandō cāritāte praeteritōrum ēmollior. Melius autem, propter ficta hūmānārum rērum flēre, quam rēbus hūmānis omnīnō nōn tangī, et prō mē sōlō vīvere. 163. Quamobrem ubi nōna venit diēs, dēcernō in honōrem mātis novemdiālem praebēre cēnam. Hospitēs autem, quōs sōlōs potuī invītāre, erant psittacus, canis, grex, leporēs, fēlēs, columbī. Hīs optimam, quantum possim, parō cēnam. Cēterōs facile satiō, sed duās capellārum experior avidissimās. Magnitūdine in diēs crēscēbant. Omnēs, cibō succulentō pāstōs, spērābam majōrēs pinguiōrēsque quam fera animālia fore, sī semper largiter praebērem. Etenim vēlōcitātem in caprīs minimē cupiēbam. Pondus corporis trahulae conveniēbat vel lac prōmittēbat ūberius; itaque largā manū pāscēbam libēns. In pābulō autem erat grāmen merum, frondēs item herbae plūrēs dēlicātae, quās in mātis honōrem suggesseram. Hās cūctās comedunt, concupiscuntque etiam. Imber dēstitit commodē: cēnsēō igitur fīniendam in saltū novemdiālem cēnam. 164. Quam celerrimē ānulō lōreō caprum apparō, ejusque caudae capram



adjungō: cēterōs solvō. Falcātum gladium in balteum īnserō, caprumque dūcēns nōtum ascendō trāmitem. Illī sequuntur. Canis in fronte excurrit, psittacus humerō meō īnsēderat, suō mōre garriēns incontinenter. Fēlēs „mīrābundae ēmigrātiōnem„ ejulant, tamquam plōrātrīcēs (opīnābar) ad sepulcrum, mox nōlēbant prōgredi: cum leporibus domī remanēbant. Magnam vėlī laciniam cum fūniculīs in dorsum caprī conjēcera; sīc saltum attinēmus. Haedī alternīs pāscuntur, lūdunt. Sed ego gladiō falcātō herbās frondēsque mollēs, quae sub quotīdiānā pluviā luxuriābant, largiter succīdō,—aliās laciniā vėlī obvolvō, aliās merō fūne colligō,—super dorsō jūmentōrum appōnēns. Opportūnum erat, quod tunc haec pābula dēportāvī, nam postea propter pluviās paulō difficilior fuit convectiō. Cēterum animantium hilaritās et mea ipsīus excitātiō maestitiā mihi dispulit.

165. Sub longiōre pluviā multum ego cum psittacō loquēbar; quod quidem ab initiō fēcera. Sed postquam cōsuētus est nucēs atque aliōs cibōs ē manū meā capere, gaudēbatque meō adventū, properē discēbat loquī, et valdē mē rīsū alloquiōque sōlābātur. Etenim, ut plūrimum, docēbam eum sīc prōnūntiāre: “Ō fatue Rebilī!” sīc enim mēmet appellāre solēbam. Atquī ille vocābulum “fatue” aut nōn potuit dīcere aut nōn voluit, meum autem nōmen libentissimē ac plēnissimē prōferēbat. 166. Aliquandō audiēbam, Ō debilī Rebilī; vel, Ō febilī Rebilī; aliās, Ō hebilī Rebilī; quae quidem sīc interpretābar, ut essent, Ō dēbilis, Ō flēbilis, Ō habilis! dubitābamque subrīdēns, numne habilis magis an dēbilis essem. Sed longē saepius meum nōmen ipsum iterābat, et quasi variābat amātōriē. Ō Rebilī Rebilī, inquiēbat; tum accelerāns semper sonōrum cursum, Ō Rebī bilī, Rebī rebī, Rebī relilī, Rebī libilī, Ō!—Et quum ego trīstī cum misericordiā vocābulum Ō! prōnūntiārem, ille mē imitāns prīmō tragicā sevērītate dīcēbat Ō! sed in fīne tamquam cavillāns dērīdēnsque illud Ō! joculariter efferēbat, dōnec in cachinnōs solvor.—Neque vincīre eum opus erat; itaque ligāmina dētrāxī.

167. Omnium ūvidissimus, ut opīnor, Jūnius erat mēnsis, numquam tamen quīnque vel sex hōrās exsuperābant pluviae. Quōdam diē post imbrem splendida fuit caelī serēnitās cum aurā mollissimā. Interrogāvī mēmet, quidnam facere oportēret. Statim respondī,—“Nunc, sī vir es, Rebilī! testūdinem marīnam reportābis.” Hoc namque saepe cupīveram, cōnātus eram numquam; sed hāc in „clārītate sōlis„ post pluviā, testūdines crēdēbam summā in aquā suspēsum īrī. 168. Cymbā expeditā prōgressus

sum. Lātō lēnīque mōtū fluctuābat aequor maris, molle, rūgōsum, et quasi oleō perfūsum. Fervōrem sōlis aura marīna discutiēbat: itaque pergō. Tertium illum attingō sinum; mox videō testūdīnēs plūrimās, summīs in aquīs aprīcantēs, fortasse dormītantēs. Cautissimē circumspiciō, et modicā dēligō<sup>[O]</sup> magnitūdine ūnam, cuius caput erat āversum. 169. Lēnissimō mōtū allābor, omnēsque caveō strepitūs; dein pedēs testūdīnis posteriōrēs trānsversīs manibus arripiēns, dum ad prōram genibus innītor, ūnō mōlīmine ac jactū praedam mediā in cymbā teneō supīnam. Morsus testūdīnis horrendus est: hunc sī cavēbis, cētera erunt in facilī: in dorsum autem conjecta, jacet immōbilis. Cōnfestim redeō, tam citō successū laetus. Postmodo haec praeda majōris mihi erat quam putāveram.

170. In diēs mox foedior ingruēbat tempestās. Tandem inter nimbōs nigerrimōs prōdībant fulgura tremenda, quae frīgus maximum incutiēbant: grandinis procellae sequēbantur. Tonitrua per plūrēs hōrās erant paene continua. Mare vehementer furēbat; aestus ipsās ad rūpēs pertigit. Quandō pluvia paulisper dēstitit, exeō prōspectūrus: ecce autem carīna nāvis nostrae decem mēnsibus post naufragium, ipsīs in arēnīs intrā cautēs prōjecta. 171. Extrā cautēs mare montōsum erat; intrā tam perfrāctum, ut nūlla posset esse cymbae ūtilitās: sed valdē brevem esse intellegō aquam. Tantā sum cupiditāte incēnsus, ut caligīs ac brachiīs exūtīs, mare ingressus nāvis fragmina scānsērim. Summae sānē partis nōn multum restābat: quid remanēret in alveō, volō inquīrere. Facile videō et multa inesse et nihil posse mē id temporis āmōlīrī: itaque postquam satis explōrāvī, redeō domum, per aquās praeter rūpēs necessariō vādēns. 172. Sed algēbam, crepitābantque dentēs meī. Mūtō vestīmenta: fricō cutem: sed algeō tamen. Ignem accendō, neque inde multum acquīrō calōris. Sēnsim invēnī, penitus in vīscera dēscendisse frīgus, et morbō mē pertentārī. Prōjectus in cubīlī, quidquid ibi erat vestīmentōrum circumvolvō. Nēquicquam. Ignārus quid facere oporteat, pavēscō nē vesper ingruat, tenebrīs obtegar, inops auxiliī cōnsiliīque. Tandem algōribus meīs nimius fervor succēdēbat, valdē profectō violentus. 173. Interdum Maurōrum fōrmulam adhibēns, in pectore aspīrāvī: “Ō Deus! ā tē prōdīvī, ad tē redeam!” Quid foret, esse sōlitārium, tum dēmum cognōveram. Jacēre, stāre, sedēre, cūncta dolēbant; flagrābat caput. Corporis dolōrēs angor mentis exsuperābat. Tenebrās, omnium rērum maximē, metuēbam. Surgō, pede titubante incēdō, aquam pōtulentam et citrea māla quaerēns. Ōs interius plānē siccum erat; lingua sī buccās, sī palātum tangeret, ibi adhaerēbat. Quārē mālum citreum in tenuissimās quasi

assulās concīdī, quārum ūnam linguae apposuī: aliās in pōculō compressī, deinde aquā commiscuī. Hoc medicāmentum sorbillābam, interdum bibēbam. Crēdidī fervorī vīscerum id fore ūtile. Alteram mox atque alteram super linguam compōnō assulam citricam, siccitātis levāmentum. Jam nox adveniēbat, recordorque animālia nōn esse pāsta. Fēlēs vehementer ejulābant. Neque potuī eās abigere, neque, dum fervor capitis īstat, sufficiunt mihi vīrēs ad ministrandum.

174. Tandem in sūdorem solvor: post hōrās dolentissimās mēns sē aliquantum recuperat. Spissō obvolūtus palliō, cibātum praebeō fēlibus, leporibus, caprīs, canī, quamquam dēbilis tōtō corpore. Jam certum habeō, quālis sit febris hujus nātūra; fēlicemque mē jūdicō, quod lūx in tantum dūrāverit. Mente levātus, plūrimisque vestibis opertus, somnum captō; sed quandō dormītō paulisper, morbida mē terrent īnsomnia, prāvā religiōne plēnā. Sānē plūribus hōrīs ante lūcem ipse sūdor cessat; tum, quamvīs dēfessus, labōriōsē cutem perfricō, et quidquid ē vestīmentīs maximē sit villōsum, libēns amplexor: ligna in culinā accendō. Dē remediō morbī tum meditor. Dīxī mē cinchōnam ē valle apportāsse, atque in ūsum coriī adhibuisse. Bonam hinc esse medicīnam nōveram; nunc vērō contrā amāritūdinem ejus firmāns mentem, aquā commixtam libere pōtō. Nec dubitō quīn mē sagāciter cūrāverim; nam febris nōn rediit. Māne autem ē cubilī surgēns, cōgitō quid posteā faciendum.

175. Imprīmīs statuō: sī possim, noctem īnsequentem nōn sine lūmine mē āctūrum. Aut candēlās aut lucernam aliquam jūdicō necessariam. Nihil facilius vidēbātur, quam Maurōrum rītū rem cōnficere, sī aut oleum aut sēbum habērem. Sed quicquid fuit, id omne crēdidī cōnsūmptum esse, aut in cibātū canis aut in scaphā resarciendā, sīve in retināculīs jūmentōrum vel in serrā. Tum testūdinis reminīscor: hujus adipem volō adhibēre. Item carnem ejus, ut novum quiddam, prō cibō statim concupīscō. Dē mactandā, fateor, haesitābam; nam tāle fēcēram nihil. Caput testūdinis sī amputābitur, tamen (ajunt) post vīgintī quattuor hōrās mordēbit tenācissimē. Quid ergō occīdet eam? Ego vērō opīnor, amputātō capite, nihil dolōris sēnsūrum corpus. Igitur ipsō in dōliō, ubi in aquā marīnā servābātur, amputō caput: hoc cautē forcipe abjiciō: cētera concīdō et plūrima intus ōva inveniō. Hōrum quattuor prōtinus torreō, vēscorque cum placentā. Maximam vim adipis excipiō. Partem hujus (eam ferē quae solidior erat) prō placentīs assandīs vel prō sartāgine reservāvī: longē plūrimam prō oleō sūmpsī. Tum

dē līnāmentīs cōgitō. 176. Fēlīciter accidit, quod huic reī nōn opus est vīribus: līnāmenta contorquēre, puellārum potest esse opera. Veterum fūnium quidquid esset corruptum, prō stuppā reposueram. Inde duābus hōrīs līnāmenta cōnfēcī, quot trīgintā noctibus facile sufficerent. In ferreā patellā dēpōnō adipem ac līnāmentum sīc circumtortum, ut fīnis hujus super labrō patellae minimum tantum dēpendat. Ipsum līnāmentum liquidā adipe saturātum accendō, experiorque rem bene prōcēdere. Equidem sī dormīrem, nēmine līnāmentum subinde extrahente, post paulō extīnctum foret: attamen id parum rēferre cēnseō; nam per igniāria possem accendere, ut prīmum ēvigilārem. Postea juvat mē invēnisse, tālem febrem posse subigī.

177. Post trīduum fīnītae sunt pluviae, et sōl prōcessit clārissimus. Ego quoque prōdeō, tepōre gaudēns. Invīsō lītus. Videō dōliīs strātum, cadīs, arcīs perfrāctīs, lignīs omnis fōrmae et ferrāmentīs. Paene in siccō erat ipse nāvis alveus, cum ancorā atque ancorālī. Cūncta jam prō meīs dēstinō, sed volō relaxārī paulisper; etenim minus firmum mē sēnsī: igitur ab hīs redeō in portum. 178. Fēlēs videō, utramque cum catulīs recēns nātīs. Tum mē subit: “Āh! illud erat, quārē adeō ejulāvēre; nōn tamquam fūneris plōrātrīcēs, sed ut expostulārent catulōrum alimenta.” Bonīs mātribus collaudātīs, praetereō. Jamque recordor, feram fēlem prīmō illō diē esse ā mē vīsam; dē quō postea aliquotiēs dubitāveram. Agnōscō, aut in saltū aut in silvā magnā tālēs invenīrī bēstiās. 179. Gregem dēambulāns assequor. Haedōs omnēs grandēscere ac pinguēscere notāveram; jamque videō jūniōrēs capellās spem prōlis dare. Invīsō leporēs: ēn autem, lepus fēmina lepusculōs ēdiderat. Nōn rīdēre nōn poteram: immō cachinnāvī. Sīc autem interpretātus sum: Teneram prōgeniem male nāscī ante fīnītās pluviās: quārē sīc esse ā Nātūrā comparātum, ut quam proximē postea nāscerentur.

180. Lēctōrī dēnūntiandum est, inde ab illā febre pietātis mē cōnscium novae factum. Rē nōn prōrsus nova erat; nam inde ab ipsō naufragiō quasi fermentātiō mentis coepta est. Tum prīmum didicī, quantī esset hūmāna cāritās, quam jūcundus ipse aspectus hominis. Mox ergā ipsa animālia ēmolliēbar, quōrum cāritatem plūris quam ūtilitātēs aestimābam. Deinde intellēxī, quam ingēns esset inter generōsissimum brūtōrum atque īnfimum hominem discrīmen: etenim quemvīs ē servīs meīs Brazīlicīs locō canis optimī vehementissimē amplexus forem. 181. Jam paenitēbat mē dē parentibus: nēminem praeter mēmet culpābam. Ergā hōs reverentia, ergā omnēs impetus quīdam amōris ac dēsīderiī mē exercēbat: itaque, ut opīnor,

ad rēctam religiōnem eram mātūrus. Etenim dīxit nesciō quis: “Quī īnferiōra bene amat, hic superiōrem bene venerābitur.” Attamen ante hanc febrem ipse Deus ignōtus quīdam ac nimius vidēbātur mihi; quem quidem dīligere, praeter nātūram esse cēnsēbam. Nec hīs dē rēbus singillatim juvat explicāre. Quippe neque ego ab aliīs neque cēterī ā mē eam religiōnem ēdiscent, quae pectoris est, nōn merae mentis. 182. Sed ipsā in febre, quandō tranquillē Deō mē commīsī, intellēxī prīmum, quam nōn longinquus esset Deus; immō, ipsō illō in locō adesse illum, sī uspiam alibī. Exinde profundior dē religiōne mē invādēbat cōgitātiō; neque cōgitātiō solum, sed cordis quīdam mōtus, quī mē tunc prīmum ad sacram lēctiōnem īnstīgābat.

183. Ē quattuor meīs librīs, ūnum dīxī esse precum Lūsitanārum secundum fōrmās Papālēs. Idcirco sprēveram. Nunc autem legēs, plūrēs inveniō versiculōs ē Jūdaicīs et Chrīstiānīs librīs, quī cūnctorum sunt, nōn Papistārum modo. Duo mē praesertim commovēbant. “Quem dīligit Dominus Deus, hunc castīgat, per virgārum disciplīnam ērudiēns filiōs.” Item. “Quārē homō, quī vēscitur aurā, dē poenīs dēlictōrum conquerātur? nae, prōdest in juventā sustinēre jugum.” 184. Tālī lēctiōne affectum, precēs et vērae et vehementēs sānctō mē gaudiō tum prīmum pertentārunt. Porrō hinc repperī, unde sōlitāriae vītae dērīvārem sōlātia. Inquiētissimus sānē interdum eram, pertaesus sōlitūdinis et suspīrāns ad alloquium; attamen tria tandem plēnē didicī:—cōstantius ea quae animō, quam ea quae oculō percipiuntur, permanēre:—Deum nōn minus mihi esse praesentem, quod abessent hominēs:—dēnique, Ut ex hōc taediō mē potuit ēripere, sīc in eōdem posse illum „pūrgātō mihi animō, plēniōrem dare liberātiōnem.— Sed haec pedetentim et plūrēs per mēnsēs. Quippe vēra religiō vīta est, nōn disceptātiō ingeniōsa, nec nisi multā pectoris exercitātiōne ipsārumque rērum experiētiā percipitur.

---

## CAPUT (VIII.) OCTĀVUM.

185. Dē grege erat quod mē male habēbat. Caprī maximī quamquam labrum perfōderam, tamen expertus sum aliquandō ferōciter eum cornibus petere; idque periculōsum esse sēnsī, quandō ad trahulam eum vellem ligāre. Rē perpēnsā, nē mihi aliquandō sit īnfēstus, cornuum ejus maximam partem serrā amputō. Relinquō tantum, quantum helciīs sustentandīs sit opus. Exinde gnārus dēminūtārum vīrium, tranquillior factus est. 186. Nē posthāc oblīvīscar, hīc libet nārrāre, quidnam cornibus ejus fēcērim. Solidiōra erant, quam caprārum quae asservāveram: jam arcum terebrandī grātiā cōficere statuō. Saxum quotiēs vellem perforāre, nihil ē meā supellectile placēbat. Erat mihi terebra,<sup>[P]</sup> erat cestrum<sup>[Q]</sup> fabrīle, utrumque tenue nimis; nōn nisi lignō vel cornuī terebrandō idōneum. Ad saxum terebrandum clāvīs spīcātīs ūtēbar multō cum labōre; nunc arcum rītū Maurōrum libet adhibēre. 187. Imprīmīs ē vēlōrum fūniumque trochleolīs ūnam dēlēgī bonam, perfectō orbe, cujus in mediō quadrātum erat forāmen. Ferreolum item dēligō; (multa in lītore tālia tunc jacēbant) quae illud forāmen tantum<sup>[R]</sup> nōn intret. Hujus ūnum finem igne mollītum valdē tundō, ut sit et solidior et paene acūtus: alterum finem in teretius concinnō. Mox līmā hīc atque hīc dētrītam, in forāmen trochleolae impingō. Acūtiōrem finem molā quoque exacuō: sīc ipsam terebram perfēcī. 188. Arcus restat. Anquīsītō rōbore solidō, ūnum fragmentum circumcīdō serrā; dein duo forāmina paulō oblīqua terebrō, quōrum in utrumque īnferciātur cornū īnfirmum. Spatium inter haec relinquo, velut manūbrium, quod firmiter possim prehendere: duōbus lāminīs ferreīs ac fūne rōbustō cōfirmō jūctūram: Cacūmina cornuum laxō nervō connectuntur: hic est arcus. 189. Nervus, trochleolae convolūtus trānsversusque, fit tēnsus: tum arcus, citrō ultrōque tractus, terebram rotat. Porrō in angustō axe forāmen faciō, quod alter terebrae finis facile intret. Axem hunc in dextrā tenēns, dīrigō terebram, dum sinistrā arcū operor. Simplicī hōc apparātū saxa dehinc longē facilius terebrō.

190. Vereor nē taediō sim lēctōrī, sī plūrima quae ēlabōrāvī accūrātē explicem. Nova atque ampla māteriēs ē ferrō lignōque, quam cum reliquiīs nāvis nostrae nactus eram, novā mē implet ambitīōne: item auctus grex vim novam trahendī offert. Idcirco, plūrima convehenda dēstināns, majōrem volō cōstruere traham, tam lātā, ut aequā fronte jūmenta trahant tria, mēque ipsum, quotiēs velim, habēnās retinentem, vehant. Quidquid lignō ferrōve cōficiendum erat, cōfēcī; sed corium dēerat. 191. Pellēs sī habērem, nec deprendī eram perītus, nec libēns propter pellēs caprōs occīderem. Tantum animal, tam plēnum sanguine, mactāre, āvehere, concīdere, nauseam mihi movēbat. 192. Sed ē fruticibus maritimīs ūnum repperī, cujus folia fūniculīs comparāverim. Haec in sōle siccāta, mox oleō tīncta, leviter contorsī, tum ex connexīs rōbustiōrēs strūxī fūnēs. Inde māteriem habēbam, ē quā habēnās, retinācula, etiam helcia atque aliās rēs jūmentīs ūtilēs cōficiō. Hīs sī nōn optimē instruēbar, meīs tamen ūsibus fuēre idōneī.

193. Vix opus est dīcere quam cūriōsē omnia ferrāmenta ex lītore collēgerim; nihil equidem sprēvī ē lignīs, dōliīs, arcīs, frācta an solida essent. Majōra quaedam ligna, multō mōlīmine sūrsum tracta ipsīs in calōribus, prō ponte dēstinō, per quem traha mea aquulam ē saltū trāmeet. Crātibus superjactīs et fiscōrum frustīs, cum tabulīs et humō, viam tandem cōsolidāvī. 194. Alteram quoque viam sub rūpibus crēdō necessariā, nē aestū maris interrumpātur trahae commeātus. *Tornō* meō (id est, novā terebrā) saxa cavō, nitrātō pulvere discutienda; et ,minus labōriōsē quam expectāveram, objicēs āmoveō viae. Profectō hanc viam facilius cōfēcī, quam ponticulum illum, quī quidem nōn magnō poterat esse ūsuī, dōnec trāmitem super rubrā rūpe fēcera trahae pervium. Omnium meōrum operum hoc vīrēs meās ūnicē exhausit, praesertim quia aurae tum maximē stāgnābant. Sed prōtinus magna habuī adjūmenta frūgibus vel frūctibus dēportandīs, sive ab hortīs meīs sive ā convalle.

195. Quīntō diē ante Kalendās Sextilēs, caprae duae partum ēdidērunt, ūnaquaeque bīnam prōgeniem. Prīmō lac mihimet avēbam, cōnorque mulgēre. Huic reī inhabilis fuī, reputānsque dēclīnō mulgendī labōrēs, nē ego potius pecorī quam pecus mihi īserviat; nam sī mulgendī negligēs forem, id pecorī foret crūdēle, mox lactis cohibēret prōfluvium. Tum in dēlicātiōrēs cibōs lac adhibēre, longē nimiū temporis erat et cūrae. Spērō mē cocīs nucibus cito abundātūrum, atque hārum lac semper fore in prōmptū.

Hīs autem dē nucibus sunt quaedam explicanda, quae praetermiseram. 196. Nōlueram barbarōrum mōre prōcērās arborēs scandere; id quod et labōriōsum fore et periculōsissimum crēdidī. Novās scālās hanc ad rem, duōbus anteā mēnsibus, et propriam falculam commentātus sum. Et quidem prō falculā, ıperticae longae in fineı loculum incīdō, ubi inhaereat ānsa cultrī coquīnāris: tum ıfuniculō cērā oblitōı (nam massam quandam cērae habēbam) ānsam illam perticamque circumvolūtā firmiter cōstrīnxī. Atquī modica firmitūdō poterat sufficere; nam acūtō cultrō leviter amputantur nucēs.—Prō scālīs ipsō in cocōrum sinū pār idōneum arborum succīdō, trīgintā ferē pedēs longārum, postquam capita dētrāxī. Utramque dēdolātā ıquantum possim sine dētrīmentō rōborisı extenuō, ut quam levissimae sint scālae. Sānē erant cavae, (medullā quādam plēnae,) idcirco rōbustiōrēs, quam sī ejusdem fuissent ponderis et longitudinis, sed solidae. Gradūs scālārum addō, ē lignīs atque ē fūne, ut in cubiculāribus meīs: sed trēs in summō fūnēs valdē laxōs relinquo, ut scālae applicatae quasi amplectantur arborem, nec possint dēlābī. Tālī instrūmentō adjūtus, crēdidī posse mē amplam nucum vim dēcerpere, quamquam plūrimae cocī ılongē prōcēriōrēsı macacīs opulentam reservābant praedam. Haec, crēdō, in Majō mēse fīnīta sunt. 197. Equidem coeōrum ūtilitātēs parum intellegēbam; sed plūrimās esse gnārus, nihil rejēceram. Frondēs pennāsve (sī ita licet dīcere) parvae illīus cocī, quam prō rēmīs succīdī, animadvertī paene tegulōrum<sup>[S]</sup> esse īnstar. Hās funiculīs ita cōnsueram, ut cucullī<sup>[T]</sup> vicem optimē gesserint. Medullam cocōrum arborum atque aliārum palmārum statuō explōrandam: corticem omnem asservō.

198. Grex, (quem propter sānitātem mātūrius in saltum trānsdūxī,) ēvulsīs solō pedicīs, in vallem rediit. Cūntōs inveniō circā vetus praesaepe, herbās ıūberīmās atque apprīmē succulentāsı summō cum gustātū rōdentēs. Pedicās dētrāxī, ipsās animantēs reputāns ā Nātūrā melius quam ā mē ēdocērī, ubinam potissimum dēgere oportēret. Quoniam cicurēs inveniō sībilōque fistulae oboedientēs, id mihi sufficit. Succurrit animō, quantum rōboris āmiserint vaccae nostrātēs domesticae, quam saepe difficilī partū torqueantur, per nostram importūnam cūrātiōnem. Vereor nē meum gregem immūtem, sī stultē ego mē immisceam. 199. Sērius, quum aurae stāgnārent calorque ingrueret, nōn ad saltum perrēxēre, sed ad apertum ac summum collem; fortasse quia culicēs vel oestrī urgēbant. Multō māne (crēdō) pāscēbantur, ante lūcem; postea auram captantēs mīrē aprīcābantur summō



in colle, ibīdem dormientēs. 200. Ego quoque in stāgnante aurā pertaesus cavernārum, postquam aliquot noctēs iterum inter rāmōs arboris dormīveram, melius fore crēdō, sī gregem sequar. Quārē multā ac difficilī māchinātiōne trēs asserēs longissimōs summō in colle sīc ērēxī, ut dē colligātīs capitibus lectus pēnsilis sustinērētur. Ego per fūnem ascendō, quī dēsuper fluitāns quasi in ānulōs nōdātur, in quōs ingredior. Ut prīmum lectulum attingerem, fūnem illum ad mē recipiēbam. Tālis erat novī cubilis fōrma.

201. Haec inter opera, ex novō quōdam juncō contextuī dorsuālem illam, dē quā dīxī, tegetem; item foliīs rōscidīs tum prīmum caput meum sub īfulā condō. Etenim nimius erat fervor sōlis; quamquam calor nōn adeō suffōcābat quantum metueram. Illā in regiōne ipsius aestātis nox longiuscula est, flābatque identidem siccā in tempestāte vespertīnus turbō ventī, quī āera refrīgerābat; necnōn quāvīs in nocte aura quaedam montāna superiōribus in locīs sentiēbātur. 202. Maris temperiem sēnsim augēscere crēdēbam; ego autem magis magisque lavācrīs captābam frīgus. Sī caput ac dorsum ā sōle dēfendās, aliō tegmine vix opus est, nisi propter culicēs; ego vērō, tenuissimē amictus, posse vidēbar multum labōris vel summā in aestāte perferre.

203. Fīnītō quod maximē urgēret, parō humum optimam ab ōstiō flūminis ad portum trānsvehere, in quā dioscōreae serantur. Locum dēlēgī, quem possem ex rīvulō „quotiēs vellem„ irrigāre. Hunc ad ūsum ligna aliquot sīc cavāvī, ut compluvī<sup>[U]</sup> īnstar essent. Rōbustissimās meās tabulās ad traham cūrātius cōstrīnxī, ut humus ingesta nē efflueret. Duōbus jūmentīs bīduum convehō humum: traha sub rūpibus in plānō currit: cava loca impleō; quidquid fimī uspiam rejectum est, comportō, opperiorque tempus dioscōreīs ipsīs plantandīs.

204. Multum fruēbar lectulō pēnsilī. Sub astrīs jūcundum erat frīgus, aliquandō tamen nimium. Nox decem hōrās dūrābat, ac sine crepusculō. Tot hōrās dormīre nōn possum, frīgēscō interdum sub nūdō aethere. Gregem comperiō pāscī trēs vel quattuor hōrās ante sōlem, dormīre post merīdiem: crēdō mē, iterum animālia imitantem, sequī Nātūram ducem. Ante sōlem exortum iīs rēbus operor, quibus lūx est minus necessāria: inter hās vēscendī operam numerō atque incēdendī sīve ad cavernās sīve ad vallem. Sed ūnusquisque diēs suum habuit colōrem suumque opus. 205. Jam crēdō advēnisse tempus frūctūs colligendī. Ūvās in hortīs inveniō multīs in locīs

jam mātūrās. Aliquot gustātīs, magnam vim dēcerptam resticulīs suspendō, ut sōle ārēscant. Multōs per diēs hūc commeāns īdem faciō, plūrēsq̄e frūctūs trahā reportō. 206. Tum *ricinum* inveniō fruticem, ē quā oleum illud quod “castōreum” vulgō appellant, cōnficitur. Multō cum gaudiō *maniocam* inveniō, ex quā cōnficitur *cassāva* pānis. Hanc in Brazīliā nōveram: inde etiam excoquitur *Tapioca* Anglōrum. Porrō *banāna* vel *mūsa* hīs in locīs nāscēbātur, īnfra autem nānās quāsdam palmās dactyliferās esse comperiō. 207. Aliō diē optimum repperī in *mangā* arbore terebinthum, crēdidīque mē hinc satis habēre posse, tum stuppae, tum terebinthī aut rēsinae. Plūrēs frūctūs colligō vix exortō sōle, postquam ante lūcem ad hortōs pedibus incessī. Sī quandō „fabrīlem propter operam,” validā nervōrum exercitātiōne opus sit, id aut ante sōlem perficiō, aut sub stēllīs lūnaeve lūce, taedīs aliquandō adjūtus. 208. Jam paulō audentior factus, canem habēns comitem, —sī ūsus venīret, sub arbore dormiēbam hōrīs merīdiānīs. Ē sopōre experrēctus, apparō traham, jungō jūmenta, ipse vehor in trahā, hortōs pōmerīdiānō tempore invīsō. Tum frūctūs ingerō, jūmentīs ad pāscendum solūtīs. Sī nimis vagentur, canis redūcit. Dēmum jūctīs iterum ad traham, dēscendō cum onere pretiōsō. Nova mox ingruit difficultās, quum nōn sufficerent arcae prōtegendīs thēsaurīs.

209. Tamen neutiquam satiāta est mea cupiditās. Ad cocōs nucēs dēmetendās falculam illam mēcum apportāvī; scālās novās ipsīs in hortīs relinquiēbam. Dum autem īnfra incēdō, *ananassās* videō multās, (*māla pīnea* vulgō nōs vocāmus): numquam ego antea hās animadvertī. Jam intellegō et plūrimās esse et maximās, paene ex arēnīs cum cactīs nāscētēs. Ūnam illicō vīndēmiāvī, nec abstinuī quīn grande frustum comēderim. 210. Mox nucem cocōrum „ab humō sūmptam,” perforandō experior num sicca sit. Paulum lactis exsūgō,—dulce, spissum, nōn cōpiōsum. Plūrēs hārum colligō reservōque seorsum. Tum applicātīs scālīs, quicquid nucum vidēbātur maximum, id dēcerptō, duōsq̄e faciō acervōs. Properē domum redeō cum ananassā illā ac falculā, et, paulum recreātus, in cymbā regredī ad hortōs volō. Attamen statum aestūs quum videō, et prōmontoria quae essent superanda, id vērō nōn ausus sum. 211. Tum subit cōgitātiō, quantō melius foret, sī scaphā possem reportāre; tanta erat cōpia, tanta varietās frūctuum oculōs et mentem captantium. Bis trahā hortōs invīsere ūnō in diē facinus erat magnum: quantum trahā possem reportāre, quīnquies id scapha portāret. Post aurōram, crēdō, lēnis aura favēbit: maris „plūrēs per diēs,” aequor fuerat undīs expers. 212. Jam dactylōs, banānās, cocōs nucēs,

ananassās, ūvās, ad libitum mē habitūrum spērō: nimia mē spēs et nimia cupiditās festīnāvit. Crāstinō diē „lēnī aurae” vēla scaphae permīsī; illa per vitream ōceanī superficiem clēmentissimō mōtū dēlābitur; mox ultrā prōmontorium paulō vēlōcius dēvehor. Dēmum laetus ipsum attingō ōstium, et dētractō vēlō, rēmīs ingredior rīvum. 213. Multa avidīs oculīs lūstrāvī: quae acervāta erant, assūmpsī: plūrima alia abripuī. Sine morā impōnō omnia scaphae, et reciprocum iter cōnor. Tum vērō fortūna sē vertit. Stāgnante aurā, vēlum inūtile erat. Rēmīs incumbō, sed tardiusculē moveor. Nervīs contentīs, dēfatīgō mēmet, aestuōsā in hōrā. Tellūrem observāns, dubitō anne prōgrediar, maximā meā vī. Cohorreō, nē hāc in parte prōfluēns sit maris, quae mē in ignōtās aquās rapiat. Ūnī hominī certē nimia erat, nisi ventō marīque favente, hujus scaphae moderātiō. Igitur dēficior fortitudīne, et reflectō scapham in palmētum, quō tandem pervēnisse gaudeō, valdē dēfessus. 214. Ego vērō angor animī, quō pactō redūcī possit scapha. Rē amplius perpēnsā, crēdō numquam mē ausūrum eam marī committere iterum. Tunc maestissimē sōlitūdinem meam conquerēns, optābam ut iterum puer ille Maurus, quōcum ex Maurītāniā aufūgī, socius mihi nāvālis foret. Sed prōtinus mē cōnscentia objūrgat, quod propter servitūtem ejus, fortasse necessāriam, ego nummōs accēperim: itaque ingemēns, ōs in manibus recondidī. 215. Exinde tamquam in somniīs hilarem audīvī vōcem, Rebilī bebile libī bilī Ō! psittacus autem in humerō meō cōnsīdēbat. Is quidem rōstrō ac capitis plūmā genās meās dēmulcēbat, ac vōcēs profundēbat cārissimās. Sānē tangēbar. Quia sine comite meō prōcesseram, ille ad hortōs „mē anquīrēns” āvolāverat. Volāsse eum, minus accūrātē dīxī; quippe mancā etiamnum pennā, inter volātum atque oblīquum saltum prōcēdēbat. 216. Tum replētā fiscellā, experior quantum possim humerīs sufferre incēdēns. Modicum bananārum et dactylōrum onus assūmō: vēscor quantum libet, bibō ē rīvulō, et, relictā scaphā, ascendō vallem. Pedibus jam siccīs, (nam aquā marīnā immersī erant) sub umbrā citrī per fervōrēs maximōs recondor, dormiōque paulum; dēmum nōtum per trāmitem ēvādō, maestusque assequor cavernās.

217. Ex quantā calamitāte quam angustō discrīmine effūgissem, per meam tempestātum imperītiā, prōrsus nesciēbam: nam, trīduō post, turbō furiōsus ventōrum tōtum caelum pervertit cietque intimum mare. In cavernīs libēns mē recondō. Tum meminī Kalendās Septembrēs imminēre, quō in diē nāvis frācta est. Annō superiōre egēnus eram, inops, spē dēstitūtus: nunc opum multārum sum dominus et praeclārō fruor

procellarum profugio. Equidem librīs legendīs et calamī ūsū petō varietātem negotiī. Quae fecī, nōn libet hīc accūrātius nārrāre; sed librō illō mathēmaticō adjūtus, dedī operam ut fundāmenta ratiōnēsque mathēmaticās solidius probārem. 218. Ut primum crēdō saevās praeterisse procellās, dēcernō in domesticum hortum incumbere. Dioscōreās circā quīnquāgintā praeparāveram, rādīcibus circumcīsīs: item septemdecim maniocās tractāveram pariter: hās omnēs in trahā reportātās rīte cōnsēvī: mox humum dē novō „ā flūminis ōstiō convectam, addidī, quia dē maniocā prius nōn cōgitāveram. 219. Macacōs vīdī frūctibus meis īnsidiārī, item „nesciō quae īnsecta, aliquot hōrum corrūperat. Nōlō dē cibārīs ānxius esse: alia multa opera cūram vīrēsque meas āvocant. Crēdō, quantum sine nimio labōre possim convehere, tantum convehendum; nam nesciō utrum, seu rōbīgine seu īnsectīs sive avibus aut macacīs, maxima pars rērum coacervātārum sit peritūra. Itaque rēs edulēs avidē reposuī; porrō aliās rēs, ut ricinum,—ē quō facilius oleum extrūxī propter fabrīlēs ūsūs quam ex aliā quāpiam rē. 220. Sed arcae loculīque ad rēs asservandās nōn sufficiēbant. Quidquid habēbam ōllārum aut lagēnārum, adhibuī ananassīs, persicīs mālīs aliisque frūctibus cōnservandīs. Ahēnum maximum oleō ricinī spurcum erat; nam quamquam arēnā ēmundāveram, manēbat quīdam odor et nauseam creābat. Nova vāsa fingere volēbam, immō magna, quae ut apud Maurōs, dōliōrum vicem sustinērent. 221. Prīma mea experīmenta valdē rudia erant. Dē fōrmā incūriōsus, argillam sōle siccāre et concoquere cōnor, sī massam aliquam possim satis cōnsolidāre. Laterēs potius quam ōllās cōnficiēbam: cito autem agnōvī, rem hāc viā nōn prōcēdere. Coctīs lateribus sine dubiō erat opus, ad furnum cōstituendum; dein igne, nōn sōle, coctōs laterēs velim. 222. Herbās in sōle siccātās prō strāmine crūdīs lateribus intertexō, argillā prīmō subāctā: sīc faciō struem. Stūpitēs viridēs cum siccō lignō mixtōs interpōnō atque compōnō: mox subjiciō ignem. Māteriē renovātā lentum calōrem per tōtum diem sustentō: posterō diē (quoniam nōn vidēbātur ignis sufficere) violentius incendō: jamque laterēs bene coctī erant et solidī. Merō lutō et lateribus illīs (sine gypsō, quod ex rūpe calcāriā potuissem combūrendō cōnficere) furnum cōstruxī. 223. Omittō nārrāre, quō pactō in experīmentum prīmō fecerim ōllās. Cēterum explōrātō, posse mē plumbō liquefactō vitream quondam faciem superpōnere, id quod propter munditiam concupīvī, optimum crēdidī, quam maximē quadrāta fingere ingentia vāsa; quoniam haec fōrma omnium esset facillima. Plūra hōrum,

fateor, praeter aciem rīmās ēgērunt; sed rēs solidās, nōn liquidās, recondēbam; itaque meīs ūsibus aliquātenus serviēbant.

224. Cēterum ut tēlōrum artem probē exercērem, intimō in portū clipeum quendam ingentem, velut mētā scopumve, ērēxī. Compāgēs erat ex assulīs: vėlōrum praetēnsīs laciniīs, in mediō (prō *taurīnō*, quem vocant, oculō) pullum lānam affīxī. Ūnamquamque ignipultārum suā in vice exercēbam, aliquandō majōribus glandibus, aliquandō aut olōrīnīs aut minimīs: sed plumbum omne dīlīgenter recollēgī, quantum poteram: spatia quoque sēdulō notāvī, ut in collīneandō perītior fierem. Nisi mē aliquō modō aut exercērem aut oblectārem, maestitia mē incessit; etenim nōn jam labōribus fatīgābar. 225. Sed multus eram tunc temporis in coquendō et condiendō, nē frūctūs perīrent plūrēs. Ōllās Eurōpaeās aliquot habēbam, sed operculīs egēbam, quae āera exclūderent. Ē *mangīs* rēsīnam quādam ēlicuī, quā velut pice oblinerem vėlōrum laciniās. Hae, operculīs circumdatae, satis bene conclūdēbant ōllās; at rēsīnam dē novō superlēvī. 226. Oblītus sum quaedam dē ējectāmentīs maris nārrāre. Ūnō in dōliō plūra invēnī ōrnāmenta, praesertim specilla ac vitreās bullās. Specillōrum ōrae dētrīmentum tulērunt; sed bullae erant incolumēs. Trēs item fasciculōs invēnī, discolōrum vestium plēnōs. Postquam aperuī, sub umbrā expōnendās dēcernō. Nōn integra fuit colōrum pulchritūdō, necnōn plūrēs vestium quasi rigēscēbant. Omnēs in cavernīs reposuī, sī forte posthāc ūtilēs fierent. Bullās autem plūrimās, resticulīs, sīve fīlīs conjūctōs, super jūmentōrum cervīcibus ōrmandī causā suspendī.

---

## CAPUT (IX.) NŌNUM.

227. Tālēs inter cūrās exercēbar, quandō nova rēs mē vehementer excitāvit, Octōbrī mēse. Quōdam māne, dum eram in culīnā, mare versus aspiciēns, repente videō nāvigium, nigrīs hominibus plēnum, quod ad portum meum vidēbātur tendere. Haesitō exanimis, neque audeō in armāmentārium excurrere, nē cernar; metuōque nē animadvertant aut rētia mea aut trāmitem. Appellunt sub caeruleā rūpe, extrahuntque captīvum, cui brachia post tergum erant retorta. Dum obstupēscō contemplāns, subitō in nāvigium redeunt cum captīvō et rēmigantēs abeunt. Extemplō alterum videō nāvigium, quod prōmontorium caeruleae rūpis studet exsuperāre: jam intellegō priōrēs eōdem tendere, nē ā sociīs suīs dīviderentur. 228. Ut prīmum ēvānuēre, surgō. Ignipultam corripio bitubam, quae Helvēticī mīlitis fuerat; quā quidem hāc in īnsulā numquam ūsus eram, praeterquam in exercitandō, quotiēs in clipeum collīneārem. Quum paulō gravior esset, furcam quandam prō fulcrō adhibēbam: quā in terram dēfixā, multō certius jaculābar. Utrumque tubum nunc dīligenter suffarciō, hunc magnā glande, illum olōrīnīs; item pār pistolārum. Vēscor parcē; placentam in sinū vestis recondō. Accīntus balteō, gladium sūmō, pistolās, bitubam suā cum furcā, item prōspeculum, quod dē collō suspēsum gerēbam fūniculō crassiōre, quia lōrīs dēlicātīs dēficiēbar. Pērulam quoque capiō, pulveris ac pilulōrum repositōrium. Tum aliquotiēs ad Nūmen Suprēmum vōta vel precēs attollēns, ēgredior prōspectūrus. Canem abēgī, quī mē comitārī voluit. 229. Ad speculam meam quantā poteram celeritāte ascendō. Inde videō circiter vīgintī quīnque virōs cum duōbus captīvīs. Ignem jam accenderant: mox ūnum ē captīvīs nūdum in arēnā extendunt, caput clāvā obterunt, et cōnfestim membra discerpunt. Cultrōs nōn clārē dispexī, sed (quod horrōrem simul ac nauseam mihi mōvit) torrefactīs membrīs vēsuntur. Dum facinus exsecror, crēdō licēre mihi, sī possim, omnēs trucidāre, quī hospitium īnsulae meae tam foedē violent. Ego autem cōnsēdī immōtus et tamquam fascinātus.

230. Repente alium videō captivum praeter ōram maris fugere: hunc quīnque persequuntur summō ardōre. Ille, collēs versus tendēns, pōne rūpem ēvānēscit. Tum exurgēns currō, cavēns tamen nē exanimis fīam; tandem iterum fugitivum discernō. Viam Lūnātam ascendit; pōne trēs virī sectantur, quōrum prīmus clāvam habuit bellicam. Duo illī sagittās. Fugitivum crēdō ā prīmō secūtōre vėlōcitatē superārī, tantummodo praeoccupāsse cursum. Ego in fossā quādam lateō, dēfīgōque furcam in solō. 231. Intellegō fugitivum nōn posse ēvādere: etenim anhelābat graviter. Ā prīmō secūtōre prehēnsus, ab illīs necābitur; sed opperīor dum prope veniant. Tranquillissimē collīneō, dein olōrīnīs pilulīs jaculor. Illicō prōstrātus cadit prīmus secūtor. Saltat metū fugitivus, fragōrem audiēns, sed nescit prīmō quid acciderit. Mox capite īnflexō respiciēns, vīdit hostem dējectum: tum ipse quoque subsistit, animam recipiēns. Secundus adhūc currit: jam sagittā arcuī applicātā parat trānsfīgere fugitivum. Id mē iterum accendit, nec tamen occīdere eum volō. Glande majōre ex alterō tubō crūra ejus petō, afflīgōque āctūtum. Quī tertius accurrit, duōs sociōs prōstrātōs cernēns, auditōque fragōre, summā celeritatē retrō cēdit. Mox duōs aliōs quī pōne sectābantur, hic vertit retrō; itaque ēvānuēre omnēs. 232. Tum egomet ēgredior. Fugitivus obstupēscēbat etiam. Tandem accurrit, et cōram prōvolūtus, terram fronte tangit. Id erat prō venerātiōne. Excitō hunc, et, Anglicē loquēns, plānē tamquam intellegat, imperō ut mēcum veniat. Vulnerātōs volō invīsere. Posterior volūtābātur humī, nec potuit surgere; tamen ab arcū ejus aliquantum metuī. Sed fugitivus circumsultāns arcum ē manū ejus ēripit: prōtinus correptī erat oblīsūrus faucēs, nisi ego īrātissimā vōce prohibuissem.

233. Vulnerātus ille stolidē admīrātur: angor (crēdō) vulneris metum domuerat; nam per femur trānsfossus est. Fugitivum jussī bracchia vulnerātī manibus cōstringere, fūnemque ē loculīs petiī, frūstrā. Sed fūniculum illum collō dētrāxī, quī prōspeculum meum sustinēbat: hic prō compede sufficiēbat. Dein vulnere īnspectō, mappam ē loculīs vestis meae extractam applicō, et linteīs īnfulae firmiter ligō. 234. Tum fugitivō imperāvī, ut mēcum tollat virum et in proximō quōdam cavō repōnat. Nōn reluctātur ille saucius: crēdō eum, quum vulnera ligārem, intellēxisse tāle facinus nōn inimīcī esse. Sed ad prīmum secūtōrem convertēns mē, mortuum esse cognōscō; fortasse in cor penetrāverant pilulae. Cōnfestim fugitivum accersēns, revīsō speculum. Ēn autem! duo illa nāvīgia jam sunt in marī, abeuntque: id quod mihi erat grātissimum. Crēdidī eōs, perterritōs quasi

mīrāculō, aufūgisse. 235. In rē tam novā vix mē recolligō; spatium cōnsīderandī cupiō; sed fugitīvus mē suscitāt, ōsculāns tālōs meōs. Equidem tum ejus dēmulseō genās, jubeōque mē sequī. Dēscendō ad cavernās: vestem induō, cibōs appōnō, ipse quoque vēscor. Veste sānē ac cibō gaudet, mox iterum iterumque mē venerātur. 236. At ego traham parō cum duōbus jūmentīs. Quandō gregem aspexit, videō quantum excitētur. Impōnō trahae lectī vestīmenta, ligōnem ac pālam quandam. Arma mea, praeter gladium, exuor: tum cum fugitīvō ac cane ascendō novum meum trāmitem, jūmenta dūcēns. Longiōre hōc circuitū regressus ad mortuum, incipiō humum ligōne aperīre, ut corpus recondam. Id vērō fugitīvus mē nōn vult facere: sūmit ferrāmenta, operam strēnuē perficit: tum mortuum humō obtegimus. Clāvam ejus cūriōsus asservāvī. 237. Exinde sine morā sauciātum hominem in traham assūptum reportō, et gestū signīsque benignīs permulceō. Profectō voluī hominem sānāre, nec ignārus eram quantum impedīret sānātiōnī pavor et ānxiētās. Quārē quidquid potuī excōgitāre, fēcī, tamquam frātrī. Aquam libenter bibit, vēscī nōluit. Postquam vulnus summā meā ope sēdulō cūrāvī, hunc relinquo: dein fugitīvī manūs parō ligāre, ut videam quō sē modō gestūrus sit. 238. Is autem, genibus prōcumbēns, summā humilitāte manūs offert, ut colligem, sī velim. Id satis erat. Ego subrīdēns fūnem retrahō: ille rūsus gestū dēmōnstrat, velle sē mihi servīre: atque ego accipiō. Jubeō in arēnā cōnsīdere. Ipse sēricam umbellam, fastūs causā, efferō, et sub hāc compositus, in optimā meā sellā sedēns, dēliberō quid faciendum.

239. Arbitror duōs hōs virōs prō servīs et prō amīcīs esse mihi ā Deō datōs, sī hōrum possim et venerātiōnem et cāritātem conciliāre. Utrumque arguō per mē esse morte ēreptum; quoniam, ille alter nē strangulētur, id per mē stetit. Utrīque crēdidī novam prōrsus esse vim jactūs igneī. Igitur spērābam mentibus eōrum posse mē dominārī. Dēcernō largam cāritātem majestāte temperātā adhibēre. Prōtenus fugitīvō indō nōmen *Ēlāpsō*; alterum appellō *Secūtōrem*. 240. Sed novus mē incessit timor, nē Ēlāpsus, cymbā vīsā, ēvādet rēmigāns; quārē rēmōs prīmō recondidī. Porrō, sī domō sōlus abīrem, vinciēbam Ēlāpsum; sed, domum reversus, nōn solvī modo, sed blandissimē alloquēbar, Anglicā linguā prōrsus garriēns. Optimōs dabam cibōs, socium operis assūmēbam, industriam ejus collaudāns: multa docuī, mox ab eō multa quoque didicī. Vīdī eum esse grātum et sēdulō oboedīre. Lēnī cum rīsū vinciēbam eum; necnōn ille rīdēbat, saepius ōsculābātur manūs meās. Sed ante nūndinās tertiās pudēbat mē vincīre, nec



jam faciēbam. 241. Jam quō magis ambōbus augērem reverentiam mei, spectāculum jaculātiōnis māchinātus sum. Duās tabulās ostentō ligneās: dēmōnstrō ambōs esse lēvēs, sine pūctō vel incīsūrā. Ūnam pōne alteram apposuī, modicō intervāllō; sīc autem ut Secūtor, quamvīs claudus, aspiceret. Dein ē parvā pistolā ēmittō ignem. Glāns, trānsverberātā priōre tabulā, dēfoditur in secundum. Igne ac dētonātiōne territī ejulābant ambō: mox vīsā glande, Ēlāpsus priōrem scrūtatur tabulam, et mīrābundus Secūtōrī dēmōnstrat parvum, immō minimum, forāmen. Nec alteruter audēbat pistolam tangere. Ipsam rem volueram. Post paulō Ēlāpsum per prōspeculum meum aspectāre fēcī; id quod cum admīrātiōne commovet. Prōcēdente autem tempore hōrologium meum ostentāvī, apertīs interiōribus māchināmentīs. Tālibus rēbus crēdēbam barbarōrum mentēs salūbriter capī. 242. Jam magnam faciō jactūram. Gnārus quantum barbarīs noceant vīna ārdentia, ānxius nē hīs aliquandō dēprāvātī sint atque efferātī, quidquid hujus generis habēbam, Deō invocātō, effūdī, praeter ūnam lagunculam, quam idcirco in arcānīs reposuī, sī forte prō medicīnā aliquandō foret ūtilis. 243. Nōndum memorāvī, Secūtōrem bonīs esse indūtum sandaliīs, Ēlāpsī pedēs nūdōs fuisse. Uterque praecīnctōrium gerēbat, Secūtor balteum quoque cum cōrītō sagittāriō. Sandalia illa ē cortice erant plicāta; Ēlāpsus autem, dum sedet domī ōtiōsus, ā mē quidem vīctus, sandalia propter meōs ūsūs imprīmīs, dein propter suōs, ē meā vetere māteriā cōnfēcīt. Tālem virum cūr vincīre oportēbat? 244. Ego rūsum illī dōnō vestem versicolōrem, ex iīs quās ex marī recuperāveram. Is accipit grātus. Post trīduum videō eum hāc veste fulgentem: colōrum splendor, quī aliquantum erat immūtātus, integer redierat. Interrogō eum Anglicē, unde hoc mīrāculum? Rīdet ille, laetāturque, sed linguā nequit explicāre. 245. Necnōn omīsī nārrāre, lacernam propter nocturnum praesertim frīgus utrīque mē dedisse; id quod libentissimē accēpēre. Etenim Secūtor, quī ambulāre nequībat, frīgus sī quod erat, graviter persentiēbat; quārē accūrātius eum prōtegēbam; et sānē grātus animī vidēbātur. Ego autem multīs signīs doceō, illōs inter sē amīcissimōs esse dēbere. 246. Tandem Ēlāpsum in cymbā mēcum collocō, post mātūtīnam pluviam. Mēnsis fortasse Februārius erat, serēnum caelum, mare tranquillum. Ad tertium rēmigō sinum, ubi horrendum illud epulum vīdī. Tum subit animum, foedās reliquiās nōn esse āmōtās: nec fallēbar. Ipsō in locō ossa trucīdātī virī albēscēbant. Carnis reliquiās aut avēs aut īnsectae abolēverant; sed calvāriam hūmānam quīvīs nōverit: item spīnam dorsī atque alia. Ēlāpsus, pietāte (crēdō) gentīliciā

mōtus, arēnā manibus corrāsā, omnēs hās reliquiās quamvīs maerēns dēfodit. Mox ad aliās rēs convertimur. Arborēs ille magnō contemplātur gaudiō, fruticēsque explōrat dīligentissimē, folia multa asportat. 247. Nē longus sim, ut primum verbīs explicāre poterat, plūrimōs indicābat mihi fruticum atque arborem ūsūs: hinc et oleō et fūnibus cito abundābam. Ex humili quōdam rubō oleum hic mihi extrāxit, itaque nōn jam cōfugiendum erat ad ricinum. Mox tria magnī pretiī indicāvit legūmina, inter ūmidiōra convallis; primum, rāpa maxima et optima, nostrātibus solidiōra et suāviōra; deinde, quiddam ē fabārum genere, grande ac bonum sālē. Dē Aegyptiōrum fabā audīvī. Nesciō an haec et illa cōnsimilēs fuerint. Tum genus quoddam, ut putābam, cucurbitae; sed fōrmā ferē cylindricā, velut pulvīnulum, colōre purpureō, optimā cucumī praestantius. Postea īdem orȳzam dētēxit ūmidīs in locīs, quōs ego ēvītāveram. Porrō gossypium mihi retēxit. Ex aliīs rēbus stuppās quāsdam vel villōs extrāxit, cannabī vel līnō parēs.

248. Aliam quandam rem voluit Ēlāpsus mē docēre, sed intellegere nequībam. Grandiōrēs aliquot avēs, quās ego phāsiānīs rettulī dum propius praeter volant, ille manibus plaudēns columbās et caprās esse dīcit. Prīmō sīc interpretātus sum, ut dīceret hās edulēs esse, ut carnem columbīnam et caprīnam. Postea explicātum est, hās avēs posse domārī et mānsuēscere, ut caprās columbāsque meās: dē quō sērius nārrābō. 249. Itidem dē palmīs multa ille mē docuit. Equidem nōveram aliās esse nuciferās, quās *cocōs* appellābam; aliās phoenīcēs, vel dactyliferās, nānās illās quidem meā in īnsulā. Jam discō, tertium genus et funiferum esse et saccharum praebēre; *caryōtum* appellārī audiō. Mollissimī fiunt hinc restēs, tamquam lōra optimē depsta, quī propter capistra jūmentōrum aut cingula possunt adhibērī, necnōn propter balteōs. Attamen ex asperō nucum villō rōbustiōrēs contexuntur fūnēs, crassae tegetēs, scōpae rigidae. 250. Quārtum dīxit esse oleiferum; id quod in Brazīliā quoque audieram; anne prōrsus eadem arbor sit, nesciō. Quīntum porrō nōbilissimum, rōbore prōcērissimō et optimō, cujus folia prō umbellā essent. Dēnique ex tribus generibus ad minimum, oleum, vīnum, saccharum, ab ūnō cēram, ab aliō farīnam optimam, prōvenīre. Sed mē juvābat, ūnumquidque inde sūmere, unde minimī esset labōris. 251. Tam cito tot rēs Anglicē Ēlāpsus didicit, ut crēderem posse mē jam, hōc ministrō, scapham redūcere. Equidem in hortōs eum dēdūxī, ubi multa mē docuit: sed melius arbitrābar, ad redūcendam scapham, Secūtōris opperīrī vīrēs. 252. Ille ex vulnere convalēscēbat, et summam mihi dēmōnstrābat reverentiam. Ut primum sine perīculō rēptāre poterat, ad

focum accēdēbat, rem culīnāriam observābat, paulātim ipse coquēbat, et quae Anglicē dīcēbam, coepit intellegere, etsī pauciōra cum eō locūtus eram, quam eum Ēlāpsō, quī mihi erat socius labōrum. Glāns plumbea sine dubiō ē crūre ejus exierat: nihil intus remānsit, quārē simplicior erat ejus cūrātiō, dōnec solidē convaluit.

253. Quōdam diē Ēlāpsus vitreās illās bullās caprīs dētrahit, et, humillimē mē venerātus, meō collō circumpōnit. Ego rīdēns dōlium eī ostendō, ubi plūrēs habeō bullās; mox dētractās collō meō caprīs parō reddere. Ille vērō reclāmat, obtestātur: tunc ē dōliō aliquās dēlēgit, quae lūcentissimae vidēbantur; hās significat mihi convenīre. Minōrēs quāsdam ac minus fulgentēs suō collō suspendendās rogat. 254. Quamquam prīmō irrīdēbam, mox videō rem nōn esse contemnendam. Nōn barbarī solum, vērū omnēs hominēs rēgem suum vel imperātōrem īsignibus imperiī decorātum volunt. Majestātī meae conveniēbat, ut rēgium aliquod īsigne gestārem. Itaque dēmum hīs bullīs, quās prō rēgulōrum Āfrōrum lēnōciniō imperāveram, egomet rēgium quiddam inesse opīnor. 255. Sī autem in rēgnō meō ad rēs ordinandās gradūs quōsdam honōris cōstituam, Ēlāpsus sine dubiō summus minister rēgius esse dēbeat, et secundāriīs gemmīs fulgere. Ingenium quoque ejus versūtius esse et capācius quam Secūtōris cognōveram, ut erant hī virī valdē disparēs. 256. Ēlāpsus gracilis erat, prōcērus, amplā fronte, micantibus oculīs, vultū valdē mōbilī, ōre autem suāvissimō. Secūtōr humerīs lātiōr erat, minus prōcērus, genīs plēniōribus, vultū nōn malō illō quidem sed tardiōre. Crūra, bracchia, crassiōra quam Ēlāpsī, quī quidem vix summās suās vīrēs attigerat. Hunc crēdidī tria et vīgintī annōs aetātis habēre, Secūtōrem trīgintā vel amplius. Ut, quae „meī vicārius,“ Ēlāpsus jubēret, Secūtōr oboedīret, prōfore crēdidī, sī Ēlāpsum quasi magistrātūs īsignibus decorārem. Itaque monīlia illa, majōra et minōra, mihi atque Ēlāpsō comprobāvī. 257. Inter haec rē fabrīlī Ēlāpsum exerceō, ūsumque doceō omnis meae supellectilis. Jam intellegēbat omnia ferē quae dīcerem, sed loquī vix cōnābātur, praeter aliquot vocābula negandī, affirmandī, approbandī, interrogandī. Artem ego ferrāriam neque exercueram neque multum fortasse sōlus potuissem: sed quum ille dē ferrāmentīs cūriōsum sē dēmōnstrat, nova mē ambitiō capit, sī forte, hīs ministrīs, ars quoque illa mihi serviat. Nunc explicō tantum, per ignem et malleum rem cōnficī. 258. Barbarōrum uterque contexendīs vīminibus, juncīs, arundinibus, cannīs, valdē excellēbat. Quidquid hujus modī ego cōnfēcī, erat sānē inhabile. Jam vērō illī magnam mihi vim quālōrum,

corbium, fiscōrum rapidē contexunt, Ēlāpsō māteriem hārum rērum comportante; necnōn, quod praesertim mihi cordī erat, idōneās perficiunt caligās textilēs. Ut aquam exclūderent, rēs nullius mōmentī vidēbātur, sī lapidum ac saxōrum asperitatēs, necnōn īnsectās dēfenderent. 259. Secūtor autem in rē coquīnāriā excellēbat. Ē cocōrum nucibus placentās dēlicātissimās, item quasi flōrem quandam lactis, faciēbat. Piscēs, dioscōreās, maniocēs, banānās, plūrimās nucēs ita condītās prōferēbat, ut nihil suprā: etenim prō condīmentīs habēbat ananassās, zingiberim, piper et alia arōmata, saccharum ē palmīs et oleum vel optimum. Mox, postquam inter silvās vagārī potuit, avēs plūrimās īnsidiīs capiēbat; unde nullō nitrātī pulveris dispendiō, suāve habēbāmus epulum. Porrō fruticem invenit, cujus foliīs in sōle dēsiccātīs aquam aspergēbat calefactam: hōrum jūs tepidum, saccharō admixtō, praesertim cum flōre cocī lacteō, grātissimum fuit. *Pōtiōnem foliāceam* appellābam. 260. Saepius mēcum dēlīberāvī, anne satis tūtō secūrēs penes hōs virōs relinquerem: videō tamen, sī quid in hāc rē sit perīculī, id fortiter dissimulandō optimē dēfendī. Sī suspīciōnem fassus erō, prāvum cōnsilium ipse submonēbō. Tēla omnia āmovēre, quae possint esse letālia, prōrsus nōn possum. Sī (quod minimē est vērī simile) ambō hominēs in mē conjūrābunt, fortasse vix poterō servārī; nam igniāria mea tēla surripient. Sed nisi conjūrābunt, alteruter mihi auxiliābitur: nec crēdō aliēnārī posse ambōrum animōs, dum majestātem ac vim meam benignitāte temperō. 261. Hīs rēbus perpēnsīs, quia lūsus corporeus mentem levat, lūdum gladiātōrium dēcernō. Etenim sī redeant barbarī, sī dēpugnāre cōgāmur, meōs virōs velim totidem barbarīs longē praestāre; at sī neque suās habeant sagittās neque fūsili plumbō exerceantur neque gladiīs bonīs rem gerant, īnferiōrēs barbarīs fiant. Igitur Ēlāpsum prōtenus, Secūtōrem simul ac sānitās permīsit, gladiātōriam doceō artem.

262. Vīmineīs quibusdam mūnīmentīs caput, humerōs, crūra prōtegitur, ut magnā vī possīmus sine perīculō caesim ferīre; et effūsōs ex ictibus habēbāmus rīsūs. Postea lūdum variābam, nē ūllā ratiōne pugnandī dēficerent. Sānē ventrem, pectus, vultum prōtegere, sī hostis pūctim petat, longē difficilius est. Spissā tegete ac lārvā rōbustā armātūram concinnāvī; sed ipsī vīminea scūta fēcērunt, quae, laevō bracchiō gestāta, ictūs repellerent. Videō tamen hanc lūdī fōrmam, quantumvīs obtūsum sūmās prō gladiō baculum, oculīs et ventrī esse perīculōsam. Psittacus autem rē gladiātōriā abhorrēbat cūctā, multōque cum ejulātū absiliēbat. 263. Mox Secūtor, quī suum retinēbat arcum atque aliquot sagittās, pennīs anatum ac

ferreīs clāvīs vult sagittās novās fabricārī. Ipsius sagittīs mucrōnēs ex piscium ossibus erant, nam ferrī suā in gente exstābat nihil. Clāvōs eōs quotquot maximē vidērentur idōneī, libēns dōnō; is autem valdē perītum sē ostendit, quum īnsuper līmam et cultrum operī commodō. 264. At ego vel parvam catapultam magnō arcuī longē antepōnēbam, pigēbatque mē quod pessulum ejus tractōrium chartā dēscribere, nēdum lignō fingere, tam difficile vidērētur. Sed calamīs et chartā dēsignandō meditor, experior, dōnec pessulum cum tālō suō tandem rēctē excōgitāverim. 265. Tum caprārum cornua, quae reservāveram, exquīrō, et idōneum prōpōnēns stīpitem caedō, sculpō, terebrō: dēnique mollissimō ē lignō, satis magnā cum dīligentiā, rude et grande cōstituō exemplar: quō vīsō tōtam rem intellēxēre. Itaque ipsīs opus remīsī ēlegantius perficiendum; nec spē meā falsus eram, nam catapultās haud spernendās post paulō cōnfēcērunt. Ego autem glandēs idōneās ē plumbō cōnfēcī, sed spīculā avēbam.

---

## CAPUT (X.) DECIMUM.

266. Circiter id temporis statuī scapham, sī possem, reducere, nē vēla prōrsus corrumpere. Ēlāpsus autem jam satis intellegēbat, quid jubērem. Malleum, clāvōs, serram parvam, argillam vitreāriam,<sup>[V]</sup> acūs sarcināriās, fūniculōs, vēlōrum aliquot laciniās, in mulctrālī composuī: haec Ēlāpsus portat. Ego cibum, pōculum, cultellum, pistolās portō. Flūmen convallis vadō trānsivimus, saxīs adjūtī modicīs, quōrum ope crēdebam pontem sine magnō opere posse cōstruī. Sīc breviōre cursū ad scapham pertingimus. 267. Prīmum vēla expandō, īnspiciō, tentō: tribus in locīs valdē īnfirma esse opīnor. Dēnotō, ubi resarcienda sint: id Ēlāpsus strēnuē perficit. Intereā mulctrālī aquam pluviālem marīnamque scaphā exhaustiō: frūctūs in aquā putrescentēs vehementer āversor: subtus inveniō solida omnia, nec quidquam rīmārum esse timendum. Fabrī ope nōn egent tabulae; itaque perfectīs vēlīs ingredimur. 268. Aura, sicut expectāveram, adversa erat. Rēmigāmus ex ōstiō, dein expānsīs vēlīs, ad dextram excurrimus, gubernante Ēlāpsō, id quod optimē calluit: ego jubeō et vēla regō. Ut prīmum dēflectendum in terram opīnor, exclāmō “Ad sinistram!” et prōtinus torqueō vēla. Oboedit ille: scapha optimē convertitur: tunc praecipuus meus dēcessit timor. Sine ūllō periculī sēnsū prīmum illud exsuperāmus prōmontorium, quamvis adversante ventō, postea celerius proficīscētēs praevertimur, dēnique lītus intrā cautēs legimus usque ad portum meum, ubi in nāvāle scapham laetus repōnō. 269. Ego autem Ēlāpsum interrogō, “Anne bona sit scapha?” Respōnsum exspectābam, “Sīc, sīc;” vel “Bona, bona:” sed admīror, quum ille clārē ac dēliberātē respondet, “Bona nōn est; bonam faciēmus posthāc.” Iterum interrogō, Cūr? Is vērō quasi novam vōcis facultātem exhausit, nihil respondet nisi, “Sīc.”

270. Quod cibōs collēgeram et sēveram longē amplius quam quod mihimet, ūnī virō, erat opus, sānē gāvīsus eram: sed quum Secūtor, injussū meō, in agellō meō novam operam inciperet, īrācundius paulō ratiōnem ejus reī reposcō. Is humillimē manibus ac vultū dēprecāns, “Sīc optimē” esse

cōfirmat. Ego vērō gaudeō, quod, tardior ingenior quī vīsus erat, per sē possit bonās operās excōgitāre; nec diū est, quum videō, in hortulō eum pariter atque in culīnā fore ūtilem. Jūmentīs īdem gaudēbat; inde spēs mihi, fore ut ex dīversīs famulōrum ingeniīs cumulātor prōvenīret opera nostra. 271. Ut prīmum, sānātō crūre, natāre ausus est, admodum gestiēbat; nam propter tepōrem maris, nigrītae omnēs natandī sunt studiōsissimī. Equidem post prīmum illum diem numquam in ipsum mare mē committēbam, nē intrā cautēs quidem; tanta mē timiditās in sōlitūdine invāsīt: in portū modo natābam. Sed cum Ēlāpsō etiam inter frāctōs flūctūs amābam lūdere; mox aquā, velut tēlō, inter natandum, avēs grallātōriās petēbāmus, quō in lūdō ācerrimum sē Secūtor ostentābat. 272. Oleō jam abundāns, *sāpōnem* facere voluī; nec poteram Secūtōrī, quid vellem, explicāre. Algās vērē marīnās plūrium generum cremāvī: eārum cinerēs oleō admixtās igne lentissimō percoquēbam, aquā calidiōre circumpositā. Item ē mangārum frūctū quum spissum quandam extrāxissem rēsīnam, hanc oleō commixtam itidem dēcoxī. Post aliquot experīmenta, duōbus modīs sāpōnem nōn ita malum cōnfēcī: tum omnem rem perspexit Secūtor, mēque in sāpōne compōnendō facile superāvit. Ūsum autem sāpōnis ēdocuī, atque exinde in cūrandō corpore ūtēbar. 273. Rīdeō sānē, quum videō quantā ille superbiā aurīgam sē ē trahā jactet, in vīlissimō quōdam scamillō sedēns, tribus jūmentīs vectus. Cēterum omnia quae imperāverim, rēctē perficit, ūsūque trahae impetrātō, multās reportat rādīcēs cum ipsārum humō: hās dīvidit aut circumcīdit, fimum cūrātissimē ingerit; dēmum satis magnō cum labōre amplum facit sēminārium. Tum mēcum arguō, sī nimium praeparētur cibī, id minimē culpandum, quoniam trēs virī vescī ē meō oportēbit: item industriōs hominēs nōn ē suīs labōribus effugitūrōs; jam prō patriā adoptāsse hanc īnsulam. 274. Ēlāpsus quoque suās inveniēbat operās: atque ego, dum uterque mihi, quidquid jubeam, oboediat, gaudeō quod liberrimā ūtuntur dīligentiā, neque socordiae sint amantēs. Tamen nē subitō dēfessī concidant, saepius excōgitābam, aut lūdō aut varietāte, levāmenta labōris. Rēmigandō, piscandō, gladiātōriīs lūdīs, natandō quotīdiē, tēlīs et catapultā, ordinārium opus variābātur. 275. Tunc autem texendō vel plicandō praesertim exercēbat sē Ēlāpsus, nec quidnam cōnficeret, satis intellegēbam. Ex cannīs diffissīs quasi tabulās complicat artē rēticulātās, juncōsque sīc internectit, ut forāmina conclūdat. Levissimum sānē erat opus, quamquam firmum. Artem ejus admīrāns, quaerō tandem, quōrsum haec spectent. Respondet, “Propter scapham, sed ferrō quoque opus esse.”

276. Amplius interrogantī, tōtum suum prōpositum explicat, partim verbīs, partim rem ipsam dēmōstrandō. Ait, scapham in fluviō esse nōn semper malam, in marī cum vėlō plēnam perīculī; quippe quae neque flūctūs neque vim ventī tolerāre possit. Duplex opus scaphae esse addendum. Nē flūctus ā fronte supercurreret, ērigendam tamquam lōricam in prōrā, dein praeter latera quasi ālās expandendās, sed hās firmandās ferrō. Id mihi esse cūrandum, sē parātūrum cētera. 277. Admīrābar hominis ingenium, nec tamen prōram praealtam approbābam; ille vērō negat sine hīs rēbus vēla prōfore. Mox ingemō, nescius quārē, quōrsum, quāndō, in magnum mare sim invāsūrus. Sed mēmet objūrgō: Cūr tandem, priusquam hī virī ad tē vērunt, tū tantopere hanc scapham fōvistī? Agnōscō oportēre, in cāsūs necessariē incertissimōs, scapham quam rōbustissimē reconcinnāre, vėlīs idōneam. Itaque dē ferrāriā rē etiam atque etiam commeditor, modo chartā dēlīneāns, modo ipsa ferrāmenta colligēns, comparāns, exāmināns.

278. Inter haec libet cum Ēlāpsō caprōrum scopulōs vīsītāre. Equidem semper timidus fueram, quotiēs ibi forem, (nam inter saxa prōspicere nequībam) nē novum quid atque īnfēstum latēns subitō ingrueret. Fateor mē, dum sōlus manēbam, timidiōrem in diēs factum. Minus minusque mē in dēnsōs artōsque locōs volēbam committere; sed aperta amābam spatia, ubi cūncta longē possem prōspectāre: idcirco quoque minus inter saxa caprīna pervāseram. Nunc cum Ēlāpsō fortiōrem mē gerēns, cum pistolīs prōdeō: ille sīcam gerēbat: explōrāre, nōn vērārī volō. Ascendimus trāmitem; verna prāta flōribus suāveolentia praeterimus; locōs nōtōs recognōscō. Mox longius penetrāns, ab excelsiōre quōdam saxō repente novum grātissimumque videō prōspectum. Lacus longissimus, quasi amnis flexuōsus, per plūra mīllia passuum in fronte jacēbat. Aquās quāsdam vīcīnās antea notāveram; jam agnōscō aut membra hujus fuisse lacūs, aut ejus quasi cisternās nātūrālēs. In ōrā erant herbae fruticēsque viridissimī, ūberrimum mītibus bēstiīs praebeantēs alimentum. Circā surgēbant acclīvēs scopulī, quibus dēcurrentēs sine numerō rīvulī lacum replēbant. Maxima vīs hīc versābātur aquātilium alitum tamquam suā in domō. 279. Dum haec mē valdē excitant, Ēlāpsus antilopārum gregem vīderat, magnā cum dēlectātiōne: mihi in *palūdēs* aspicientī illud jam succurrit, fortasse hās ejus esse generis quod *palūstre* appellātur. Sed nōlō eās perturbāre, atque ad mare potius dūcō, ubi juga montium altius assurgēbant. Lacum ā septentriōnibus circumeō, inde pergēns mare versus. Tandem, per scopulōs ēnīsī, mare nōn longē vidēmus, sed dēscēnsū asperrimō ā nōbīs dīvīsum.



Subjacēbat ōra terrae, longula, palmīs praesertim abundāns; sed rūpēs ulterius ipsās in undās vidēbantur sē praecipitāre. Nūllum sānē portum hāc in ōrā dispiciō, quod orientem versus patēbat. Circumversī, sed mare dēspicientēs, redīmus domum. 280. Ego vērō, quamquam augēscēbant imbrēs, operā ferrāriā identidem exercēbar. Incūdem, follēs, malleōs, forcipēs, ē rē tormentāriā nāvis nostrae habēbam. Fornācem dē novō, famulīs meīs adjūtus, dēcrēvī extruere, latericiam māteriem residuam adhibēns. Carbōnēs ē lignō parāre uterque probē calluit. Mox, Ēlāpsō follēs exercente, ego ac Secūtor ferreolōs calefactōs tundēbāmus. Etiam calidum frīgīdō pertundere docēbam, dum Secūtor forcipem tenet. Sīc virgae ferreae, quālēs propter scapham postulābat Ēlāpsus perficiuntur. Aliud post aliud paulātim cōnāmur; prīmō multimodīs clāvōs ferreōs mūtābāmus,—in hāmōs, in ānulōs, mox in spīcātōs ānulōs; sīc plūrēs in fōrmās discēbāmus ferrum fingere. Tandem illī, rē tōtā perspectā, significant, meō labōre nōn jam esse opus: sē hujus artificiī esse compotēs. 281. Inter haec, magnō sum dolōre afflīctus, occīsō psittacō. Hunc accipiter quīdam incautum excēpit, neque ego ulcīscī poteram, quamquam strepitum cārissimae avis audiēns. Sed antequam ignipultam attinērem, hostis cum praedā ēvānuit. Hanc sānē rem aegerrimē tulī. Quod postquam animadvertit Ēlāpsus, sōlārī mē volēns, psittacōs nōn bonās esse avēs dīcit, aliās quāsdam longē meliōrēs; neque dolendum esse, quandō tanta mihi superesset avium pulcherrimārum atque ūtilissimārum varietās, quae *velut caprae aut columbae* cibātum ab homine accipere vellent. Tunc meminī, eum tāle quid dē phāsiānīs illīs dīxisse; mox interrogandō comperiō, ipsās hās avēs facile mānsuēscere et ōva parere plūrima: id quod libenter audiō. Tum Secūtōrī dēnūntiō, sī aliquot hārum avium possit īnsidiīs capere vīvās, id mihi fore grātissimum.

282. Plūrima per imbrēs parābāmus. Catapultās in diēs perfectius figūrābant: lōricam ego et ālās scaphae summā cūrā mātūrābam. Scīlicet Ēlāpsus bitūmine quōdam opus suum perūnxerat, ut aquam rejicerent juncī cannaeque: ā mē postulābat ut compāgem tōtam firmiter conjungerem. Alia quaedam in melius novābam, quae longum est dīcere:—dē supellectile tractōriā, item dē arcīs penāriīs. Famulī autem meī operās quāsdam inter sē exercēbant, dē quibus nōn cōsulēbar. Id mē nōn conturbat, quoniam industriōs sentiō. Inter imbrēs pābula vel ligna colligunt, folia, cannās, alia reportant, fimum humō ingerunt, gregī īnserviunt, natant, rēmigant, gladiō vel tēlīs sē exercent. Sīc diēs praetereunt celeriter. 283. Jam Secūtor ad mē venit, venerānsque humiliter ait, “Pessimōs esse leporēs: velle sē occīdere.”

Dioscōreās et maniocās ostendit, nōn corrōsās modo, sed ex humō ēvulsās. Leporēs sī suprā sint, “bonōs” esse ait, sed “īnfrā nōn bonōs.” Etsī parum bene loquēbātur, intellegō quid velit, et videō nōn esse absonum. Attamen vexāre mītissimam gentem, quam egomet tamquam colōnōs dēdūxeram, id nimis crūdēle putō. Tandem, multum reluctātus, ēscā atque blanditiīs veterēs mānsuētōsque parentēs capiō, et in prīstinam caveam conclūdō. Cēterōs ad arbitrum Secūtōris abigī aut occīdī patior. 284. Duōrum jam ministrōrum operā adjūtus, paulō amplius poteram litterīs mē dare: id vērō ipsum illī mīrābantur. Aliquandō quāsdam rēs iīs ē librō legēbam, sī quid possent intellegere: post paulō id eōs penetrābat altius. Nempe vidēbant, sibi esse aut suam aut senum aliquot „quibuscum vīxissent,” sapientiam; mē ex librō plūrimōrum cognitiōnēs ad libitum meum haurīre. 285. Quoniam neque librōrum habuī cōpiam, neque ōtium iīs esse poterat, litterās docēre supervacāneum crēdidī; sed liberē colloquēbar multīs dē rēbus. Illī autem, arrēctīs animīs, studiōsē auscultābant. Dē meīs fortūnīs aliquot rēs ēnārrāvī, dēnique dē naufragiō. Magnitūdinem dēmōnstrāvī nāvis et ūberem rērum cōpiam, quam ex merīs ruīnīs excēpī. Tālia dum nārrābam, illī textilia continuābant opera et linguae meae in diēs fīēbant intellegentiōrēs: id quod maximī sānē erat mōmentī.

286. Tandem sē aperiunt, explicantque quidnam ēlabōrāverint. Rēgium mihi vestītum exhibent atque impōnunt. Prīmum erat capitis decorāmen, crista vel corōna ex pennīs multicolōribus: hanc īnfulae meae superimpositum volēbant. Dein teges dorsuālis ex palmeīs cannīs atque arundinibus; quae sīc erant dispositae, ut ipsārum colōrēs prō pulcherrimō fuerint ōrnāmentō. Praecīnctōrium item erat ex mollibus juncīs, quod ā ventre ad genū pertingēbat. Tum calceī, ex palmārum fūne suprā, ex cocōrum villō īnfrā. E bullīs vitreīs catellās fēcerant, collārem tālāremque: porrō aliās bullās aut vestī aut praecīnctōriō assuerant, tamquam gemmās. Tālia fidēlitātis documenta laetissimē et benignissimē accēpī: sēnsī profectō, posse barbarica rēgnī īnsignia multum valēre, aut apud hōs ipsōs, aut apud aliōs barbarōs. Dēcernō quotīdiē, fīnītis operibus, ūnō alterōve hōrum mē ōrnāre; et sī quā diēs sōlemnior vidērētur, gestāre ūniversa. Nunc, benignitātis ostentuī, utrumque fidēlium ministrōrum super oculīs ōsculor. 287. Longum foret sī nārrārem, quantā cum industriā messem frūctuum, rādīcum ac foliōrum suā in tempestāte collēgerīmus, trēs virī cum tribus jūmentīs. Ego autem post biennium hāc in īnsulā jam factus sum temporum perītior: sī vērō antea ego nimium fuī avidus, hī nunc meam

aviditatem superant. Nec culpō, immō laudō et grātiās agō, quod tam labōriōsē vīctum et dēliciās comparent. Pluviae, calōrēs, procellae, fulgura, suō in ōrdine, velut annō superiōre rediēre. Dēmum, tempestāte illā perāctā, caelī serēnitās rediit; atque illī sub aurōram labōrantēs, scapham perficiēbant praesaep̄tam labrōsamque. Dein post autumnālēs procellās prōrsus fīnītās, ut ipsō in marī probārētur opus, ērēctī sunt omnium animī. Vēlīs accūrātissimē recognītīs, variās cursūs experīmur fōrmās. Prō saburrā „ponderōsa aliquot saxa, portābāmus; haec cum ipsā ancorā ita collocāvimus, ut scapham male dēprimerent; quae nihilōminus sē solidam stabilemque praestitit. In portum regressī, novam lōrīcam explōrāmus, num quā laxētur vel firmitāte careat. Sānē plauditur ab ūniversīs. 288. Postrīdiē cōram mē submissē veniunt, dīcuntque, “esse quod velint ōrāre: spērāre sē, benignē mē auditūrum.” Impetrātā veniā, liberē curtēque explicant, “sine uxōribus vītam nōn bene trānsigī: velle sē in scaphā uxōrēs ex adversā terrā reportāre.” Id mē sānē perculit: tot rēs in mentem irruēbant; vultusque meus, ut crēdō, retegēbat, quid sentīrem. Breviter ajō: “omnī in rē mē illīs cōsultum velle; sī possim, factūrum; sed multa esse perpendenda, nec posse mē illicō respōnsum dare. Ad mūnia sua redīrent, crēderentque mē dē suō commodō ānxiē meditārī.” 289. Dē mōbilitāte et perfidiā barbarōrum multa audīveram. Mēmet interrogābam, ane idcircō rēgiīs mē honōribus cumulāverint, ut scapham fūrātī abīrent. Id vērō posse negō; hī namque virī fuēre hostēs: uterque ad mē quam ad alterum propior est. Tum sī aufugere velint, Quamne ad terram? ane ad patriam? sed patriae sunt dīversae. Sed sint sānē fidēlēs: mēne scapham meam cum meīs ministrīs marī committere, domī sedentem? quī sī flūctibus haustī numquam redeant, iterum sum orbātus, et pejus quoque, spē abruptā. Melius arbitror perīcula participāre. At sī omnēs ēgredimur, quis gregem cūstōdiet? quis frūgēs dēcerpet, servābit? Tālia comeditātus, crāstinō diē iterum colloquor. 290. Prīmum interrogō, Anne jam uxōrēs habeant. Secūtor abruptius respondet: “per mē suam uxōrem ā sē distractam:” fuscus autem rubor, dum loquēbātur, vultum oculōsque implēbat, in quō tenerum aliquid inesse putābam. “Mortuum esse sē uxōrī suae,” addidit; “quae, secundum gentis mōrem, jam aliī virō sine dubiō nūpsisset; quoniam, sē vīvere, nēmō suōrum posset crēdere.” Rēctē eum dīcere jūdicābam. Mox Ēlāpsus ūmēscēte oculō incertāque linguā respondet, “sibi virginem quandam fuisse dēspōnsam, quādo ab hostibus surreptus esset.” Nihil ultrā addidit. 291. Deinde interrogō, unde velint uxōrēs petere? ab Ēlāpsī patriā an ā Secūtōris? et quō signō cursum in marī

possint dīrigere? Respondet Ēlāpsus, “Secūtōrem ad ipsīus patriam nōlle revertī: id uxōrī ejus fore crūdēlissimum: Ēlāpsī patriam ambō petītūrōs. Cēterum sī ventō favente hanc īnsulam ipsā vesperā relinquant, cum lūce terram continentem propius vīsūrum, cūctam sibi satis nōtam; deinde, ut prīmum populāribus suīs aspiciantur, hīs approbantibus ad terram appulsūrōs.” Tālia quum audīsem, respondī: Rēctē sē rēs habēre; sed amplius esse ponderandās.

292. Vespere post operam, ad rem redeō, interrogāns: “Quis autem tot buccīs cibum dabit, sī hāc in īnsulā quīnque erimus,—trēs virī, uxōrēs duae?” Tum Secūtor arrīdēns ait, “Octo hominibus satis esse jam cibī, superque.” Ēlāpsus autem, genibus meīs prōvolūtus, dextram ōsculātur, ōratque, “nē irāscar; sed amplius quiddam illōs in animō habēre. Interrogantī mihi, Quidnam igitur?” respondet: Mātre suam esse mortuam, frātrēs occīsōs: velle sē, sī possit id fierī, patrem suum hūc trānsvehere. Hoc quum dīxisset, vultum meum sollicitē contemplāns, addit: “Numne aliud quiddam audeam dīcere?” “Perge:” inquam. Tum dīcit, “Nescīre sē, quis sit uxōrem datūrus: posse autem fierī, ut parēns, quī ūnam habeat virginem fīliam *ita* velit dare, *sī* cum eā sit itūrus. Anne ego nōlim īnsulam meam frequentārī?” Rēs ipsa nōn mihi displicēbat: quamquam id quoque reputō, cavendum esse, nē nimiā barbarōrum frequentīā ipse in servitūtem redigar. Ergō benignē respondeō, dē tot novīs rēbus cōnsīderātē cōgitandum. Illud tantum affirmō, sī proficīscuntur, mē socium perīculī habitūrōs.

293. Postrīdiē iīs annūntiō, grātissimum esse id mihi, quod tam longē prōspexerint tamque industriē labōrāverint, praeparantēs cibum, īnstrūmenta, māteriem, ipsamque scapham. Tālibus virīs, quidquid restet arduī, spērāre mē fore prōnum; sed priusquam aliīs dē rēbus dīcam, illud apprīmē necessārium, ut nostram nōs īnsulam explōrēmus, antequam in cāsūs maris committāmur. Hoc enim stāre mihi certum, ut nōn sine mē nāvigent. Jam sī procella ingruet, sī vī ventī in aliud īnsulae latus dētrūdāmur, quid ignāviū, quam nōn nōsse portūs, lītora, rīvōs, ubi tūtō recondāmur? Circumnāvigandam īnsulam, indāgandās prōfluentēs maris, tentandās bolide profunditātēs, notandās in chartā montium fōrmās, priusquam in incerta maris ruāmus. Haec quum dīxissem, illī prīmō vix intellegēbant; sed postquam bis terque explicāvī, tandem aequissimīs animīs dēcrētum meum accēpērunt.

---

## CAPUT (XI.) ŪNDECIMUM.

294. Post hōs sermōnēs uterque magis magisque in operās ruit. Vestītūs nūptiālēs ac dōna spōnsālia crēdebam praeparārī. Cannārum, arundinum, juncōrum, restium vel fīlōrum, pinnārum plūmārumque magnam vim comportābant. Postea explicātur, patriō Ēlāpsī rēgulō plūmātam vestem ac dorsuālem tegetem prō dōnō dēstinārī. Id quum intellēxī, ē vitreīs meīs bullīs plūrēs obtulī, ut prō torque collārī essent: hās accēpit Ēlāpsus libentissimē. Videō quoque lectōrum opercula vel strāgula ē mollibus juncīs contexī: igitur versicolōrēs vestēs „quās habēbam fulgentissimās, in spōnsārum ūsum dōnō. 295. Ego vērō bolide (quam Graecī vocant) quaesītā;—etenim plūrēs in nāve fuerant—saepius cum alterutrō virōrum ēgrediēbar longius, interdum in cymbā, sī valdē esset serēna tempestās, quia tum rēmīs certior est cursus. Tunc tōtam illam ōram quae Caprīnō Jugō subjacet, satis explōrāvī; nusquam patēbat scaphae receptāculum: sed collēs accūrātē dēlīneāvī, ut locōs posthāc recognōscerem. Necnōn cum ambōbus in scaphā ēgressus, ōram adversam juxtā hortōs ulterius vīsītāvī; quidquid dē lītore, dē profunditāte, dē montibus erat notandum, id cōnscrīpsī, notātīs caelī regiōnibus. Necnōn ūnīcuique montium nōmen indidī aliquod, cum suā figūrā dēscrīptum. 296. Quum diē quōdam in hortīs cum Ēlāpsō permānsī, Secūtōre domum missō propter variōs ūsūs, per īnferiōra prāta dīligentius exspatiantēs, orȳzam invēnimus in ūvidiōre locō lātē crēscēntem, ubi numquam antea incesseram. Hanc rem crēdidī posse aliquandō magnī esse mōmentī. 297. Postrīdiē quiēscēntē aurā, excurrimus in cymbā usque ad portum hortōrum. Montem illum altissimum jūdicō praecipuum esse oportēre locōrum documentum. Quārē ā tribus lateribus figūram ejus accūrātē dēlīneō; tum crēdidī, mē, sī hāc in parte īnsulae forem, in diē quamvīs nūbilō positūram meam agnitūrum. Cautēs quoque, sī quās vidērem, scrīptō notāvī. 298. Prōfluentēs maris multō erat difficilīus observāre vel conjectāre; nam aestus diurnus atque aura conturbābat ratiōnēs meās. Īnsulam ā Septemtriōnibus praevertī nōn ausus sum. Multa

nāvigandō expertus, tandem dēspērō dē prōfluentibus cognōscendīs, nec valdē perturbor, sed dē hāc rē reticuī.

299. Domum revertentī dēlicātissimum mihi prandium appōnit Secūtor, ex avibus grandiōribus membrātīm concīsīs. Genus avium nesciēbam: num ōtidēs<sup>[W]</sup> esse possint, dubitābam. Ille explicat, esse eās ex hōc genere, quod mānsuēfactum volēbam; sed hāctenus nūllam sē cēpisse vīvam. Neque ille neque Ēlāpsus vult vēscī: sed postquam fīnīvī, vēscēbantur. Tum interrogō, quidnam dē grege possit fierī, sī nōs omnēs peregrīnāmur. Tacent paulisper; mox Ēlāpsus respondet: “Sī faveant aurae atque Fortūna Marītālis, trīduō nōs posse revertī. Solvendum esse gregem, compedibus fortasse vel objicibus praepeditum. Quandō redeāmus, fistulae cantuī oboedītūrōs: sīn minus, sī forte haedōrum aliquot āmittantur, ferendum damnum. Nōs ē colle Caprīnō novōs haedōs, sī libeat, vērārī posse; uxōrēs nōn posse.” Quandō haec sērīō ac dēliberātissimē dīxit, vix rīsum continuī.

300. Sed pergō interrogāre, Quot rēmōs habēāmus scaphae. “Duōs tantum,” respondent; eōs nempe quōs egomet fabricāvī. Id sufficere negō; quippe sī aurā dēficiāmur, fortasse rēmigantēs trēs virī quattuor rēmīs novum assequēmur ventum, sed duōbus ūtentēs rēmīs in stāgnante āere haerēbimus. Novōs rēmōs, clāmant, caedendōs; id quod ego comprobō.

301. Tum alium injiciō scrūpulum. Sī barbarīs foret cōnflīgendum, ego ignipultā pistolisque valeō; ministrī meī cōminus gladiō bene pugnant, sed ēminus ā barbarīs superantur. Nam neque multās habent sagittās, neque multum in hāc arte sunt exercitī: porrō sī maximē essent sagittārīi, duo virī ā multīs facile obruuntur. Meliōribus opus est tēlīs,—Hīc pausam faciō.

302. Illī prīmō tacuēre: tandem invītō sermōnem. Ēlāpsus timidē interrogat, “anne sciam, quot habēāmus in ūsum catapultārum praeparāta spīcula missilia?” Tum respondeō, “Ego certē nesciō.” Ille vērō, tamquam veritus nē mē reprehēnsiōne corripiat, tacet iterum. Sed Secūtor, paulō audentior, testātur, “nōn posse illōs portāre spīculōrum jam cōnfictōrum pondus: plūra cōnfigere, inūtile esse: quod genus tēlōrum sit melius, sē nescīre, nisi sī ignipultās dēnotāre velim.”

303. Sēnsī mē errāsse; nam nōluī igniāria tēla tunc eōs ēdocēre. Itaque benignē dīxī, “industriam illōrum omnī laude esse dignam, mēque gaudēre, quod tantam habērent spīculōrum vim: spērāre mē, sine proeliō aut jūrgiō nōs reeditūrōs; sed quotīdiē catapultās exercērent, et tot uterque sēcum assūmeret spīcula, quot rēs ipsa permetteret.” Tālī respōnsō contentōs sē dēmōnstrābant.

304. Caesīs duōbus cocōrum truncīs, dissecāmus, dolāmus, in rēmōs fingimus;—nam quattuor rēmōs placēbat cōficere. Variātā operā ac lūdō, in labōrēs reficimur, aemulātiōne ac spē ērēctī. Haec inter negōtia multum colloquimur. Dē ipsōrum patriā interrogō virōs, numne eārumdem rērum sit ferāx, quae hāc in īnsulā gignuntur. 305. Illī explicant, paene contiguās sē habitāsse regiōnēs, scopulōsā ōrā dīvisās, quae ipsōs propter scopulōs, ab utrīsque concupīscerētur; hinc illōs internecīnīs involvī bellīs. Nam cēteram suōrum terram ex merā humō cōsistere, mollī, ūvidā, arboribus fruticibusque ūberrimā, sed siccīs solidisque locīs carente: porrō per inopiam ferrī optimum lignum minus esse ūtile; igitur saxō dēstitūtīs nūlla esse domōrum fundāmenta. 306. Domōs gentīliciās, ut plūrimum, nīdōs esse, inter rāmōs arborum contextās, ut ab ūdō solō submoveantur, praesertim tumēscētibz fluvīīs. In ūvidā calidāque illā humō prōcērās nāscī arborēs, ēgregiōs frūctūs; plūra tamen genera meīs in montibus vigēre, quae illīc ūvidus calor nōn patiātur. Interrogō, Habeantne ūvās? “Habēbāmus,” inquit Secūtor, “sed gustū hīs disparēs: nīl erant nostrae, nisi dulcis quaedam in ōre aqua.” “Ergō,” inquam, “tū exquīre, quidnam ē siccātis nostrīs ūvīs sit optimum, quod patrī spōnsae tuae dēs dōnō.” Arrīdet. 307. Tum in Ēlāpsum conversus: “Tuāne in patriā nūptiās tum celeriter perficiunt, ut parēns tribus hōrīs ūnicam filiā virō ignōtō forās dūcendam trādat?” Paulum pudibundus respondet ille: “Sī pater domī relinquendus erit, nōn potest id fierī: sīn pater cum filiā sit itūrus, potest nōnnumquam. Atquī neque ego inter meōs sum ignōtus, et propter mē cōnfident Secūtōrī. Tē autem rēgiē vestītum postquam vīderint ac vim tēlōrum nōverint, audierintque ā mē quālis et quantus sīs, quidlibet mihi tuī grātiā concēdent.” Dubitābam, merane esset hoc adūlātiō, an vērītās; vēra tamen eum dīcere, libēbat crēdere. 308. Mox ē Secūtōre quaerēbam, quāpropter ipse atquī ipsiūs populārēs ad īnsulam meam tunc pervēnerint et numquam aliās. Rem ab initiō nārrat. Scopulōsa illa regiō erat ab alterīs occupāta: hinc coeptum est bellum. Quisquis hostium erat in praesidiō, comedendus dēstinābātur: id gravissimum iīs supplicium. Inter aliōs correptus est illīc Ēlāpsus. Sed patriam versus redeuntēs oppressit procella, quae duās scaphās in apertum mare abripuit. Tōtam noctem frūstrā luctātī, summō māne īnsulam meam nōn longē vīdērunt. Volentēs neque vēnere neque iterum venient; nam igneī meī tēlī vīs prō fulgure praestigiātōris dīvinī sine dubiō nūntiātur. 309. Tum volō scīre, utrum hīc esse īnsulam prōrsus nescīverint. Tum Ēlāpsus cōnfirmat, montem īnsulae excelsissimum

interdum distinguī; sed nōn vacāre ut merā cūriōsitāte marī sē committant, —tumidō, an tranquillō. Percontor, numne carō hūmāna propter libīdinem palātī exquīrātur. Ambō vehementer negant: in ultiōnem summae injūriae, idcirco tantum ajunt quasi religiōsē comedī. 310. Mox Secūtor urget, ut disertē dīcam quō diē velim nāvigāre; nam certum sē habēre, benigna mea verba prō factīs valēre, nec velle mē sine causā diem prōferre. Tum videō dēcernendum esse sine ignāviā dīverticulōrum. Respondeō, sī cūncta parāta sint, intrā trīduum nōs profectūrōs. Rūrsus interrogat, anne velim eum omnia, quae victūs causā sunt commoda, praeparāre: ego autem assentior. 311. Crāstinō diē, dum aliīs in rēbus absum, Secūtor haedum jugulat, sanguinem in agellō suō diffundit, cornua reservat, membra discerpit; alia coquit, alia suspendit in fūmō. Ungulās Ēlāpsus prō glūtine arripit, pellemque incipit patriō mōre depserē. Haec rediēns inveniō obviam; sed neque probō neque culpō, quoniam veniam meam praeripuerat Secūtor. 312. Ad Ēlāpsus conversus quaerō, anne suā in patriā tālēs sint caprī, sive aliārum pellium abundantia. Respondet, apud suōs abundāre ursulōs, porcillōs, immō porcōs variī generis, macacōs, sciūrōs, et quadrupedēs caprīs meis parēs, paene aquātīcōs; ex quibus pellēs dīversās habeant; porrō formīdandōs sed rārōs pardōs, quōrum pellis optima sānē: item audīsse sē, longē inter scopulōs collēs caprōs ferē hujusmodī existere: sē numquam vīdisse.—Libet mē tālia scīscitārī et colloquī.

313. Post bīduum mihi nūntiant, parāta omnia: occidente sōle nāvigandum. Hic nūntius mē quasi stupōre dēfīxit; nam mīlle rēs prius vidēbantur cōficiendae. Sed videō mē multa imperāsse: nunc dictō oboediendum: ergō dē bellicō apparātū prīmum satagō, postpositīs rēbus cēterīs. 314. Mox reperiō Secūtōrem leporēs meōs occīdisse, coxisse, sub crustulā condidisse. Vultū angōrem dēmōstrō: sed ille, mē commōtum sentiēns, humī cōnsīdit tacitus, reprehēnsiōnem (crēdō) expectāns. Dēmum frāctā vōce ait: “Paenitet mē, sīquid tē, ere, laesi.” Tum suspīrāns dīxī, “Mūtārī nōn potest: fortasse nōn male fēcistī: cēterum nē canem meum occīdās. Ego vērō tibi ignōscō.” 315. Nē longus sim, ferē Nōnīs Novembribus, sub noctem nāvigāmus, nunc rēmīs, nunc aurā adjūtī. Astrīs facile dīrigēbātur cursus ad merīdiem. Quum ventō tranquillē ferēbāmur, quiētī mē dedī, jubēns, sī quid mūtārētur, expergēfacere. Ante lūcem stāgnāvit aura; tunc ēvigilō; jubeō rēmīgāre. 316. Ortō mox sōle, Ēlāpsus grūmōs patriōs procul agnōscit: uterque maestior vidēbātur: susurrābant inter sē. Sed Ēlāpsum dormīre jubeō: ego cum Secūtōre prōpellō scapham.



Post hōrulam videō Ēlāpsum propter inquiētam mentem nōn posse dormīre; itaque Secūtōrī imperō somnum. Quandō intrā cōnspectum venīmus, Ēlāpsus in mālō ērigit signum, apertāque arcā, rēgiīs vestibus mē exōrnat. Tum extractō cibō vēscī hortātur. Secūtor mox ēvigilat, et vēscimur omnēs, cane nōn invītō. 317. Jam linter ā terrā cautius appropinquat: trēs inerant virī: crēdō, quia nōs erant trēs. “Quid autem tē tuī cīvēs vocant?” Ēlāpsum interrogō. “Ego apud eōs” inquit, “sum Gelavi.” “Dehinc ergō apud mē eris Gelavius,” inquam. “Ego vērō apud meōs eram Totopil,” ĩnfīt Secūtor. “Ergō tū,” inquam, “eris Totopillus.” Dum rīsū et alloquiō oblectāmur, accesserat linter: mox noster Gelavius nesciō quid clārā vōce prōnūntiat. Illī gestientēs strepunt, proximē accēdunt, mē mīrābundī aspectant. Postquam iterum perōrāvit Gelavius, illī rapidē ad terram rēmigant, nōs sequimur tardiusculē. Tandem, jubente Gelaviō, ancoram jacimus: mē virī meī, honōris causā, umerīs suīs in lītus dēportant. Strātīs tapētibus, cōnsīdō: sēricam meam umbellam Totopillus super mē praetendit; Gelavius ēvānuerat. 318. Oppērīmur reditum ejus. Redit dēmum cum catervā magnā. In fronte erat ipse, cum seniōre virō et virgine. Tum mē compellāns ait, “Ēn pater meus! Ēn ūnica soror!” Pater genua mea manūsque fervidē ōsculātus est, virgō quasi venerāns cōstitit. Mox Gelavius cum Totopillō verba sēcrētō habet, post quae intimōs crēdidī sermōnēs miscērī. Intereā tōta nōbīs caterva circumfunditur, mox ad scapham sē convertit. Id mē aliquantum commovet. Gelavius autem multās rēs, dōna prīncipī, effert; dein ignipultās meās cum sacculīs subsidiāriīs: mox Totopillum videō scūtulum prō mētā ērēxisse.

319. Quīnque juvenēs cum arcubus astābant. Ā vīgintī passibus sagittās ad scūtulum dīrēxere; nēmō medium ferit, nēmō per tabulam penetrat. Deinde Gelavius et Totopillus ā trīgintā passibus ē catapultīs jaculantur. Hī et jūstius collīneābant, et altius penetrābant: facile erant victōrēs. Postea ad mē venerāns accēdit caterva, ōrāns ut ignipultae ostentem vim: tum multō cum honōre ad carcer dūcunt. Quīnquāgintā passūs mētārī jubeō: bitubam meam suā cum furcā comportāveram. Dēmissō genū, bis ignem ējiciō: utraque glāns medium trānsverberat scūtulum. Ejulābant territī, mox murmure collaudābant: deinde magnum erat silentium. Gelavius tunc cūctīs explicat, hīs tēlīs sē per mē fuisse servātum. 320. Inter haec Gelaviī pater cum filiā cōram mē redit, Totopillus autem prō interprete mihi explicat, velle illum sē suamque filiam fideī atque ĩnsulae meae committī. Tum ego abruptius Totopillō, “Egone hanc prō tuā uxōre mēcum

reportābō?” Is autem ērubescēns annuit: “Ere! reportābis sānē, sī libet, et uxōrem meam et patrem uxōris.” “At vērō,” inquam, “prīncipī oportet mē obviam venīre honōris causā, nec tamquam clanculum abīre.” Respondet Totopillus, “Immō, id prīncipī foret ingrātum. Ille neque tibi vult offēnsam afferre, neque nimio ergā tē honōre sē suis ēlevāre.<sup>[X]</sup> Sed dōnīs Gelaviī plācātus, honōrificam cōram multitudīne dē tē fēcīt mentiōnem.” 321. Jamque accurrit Gelavius, excitātus ut numquam vīderam. Hic sēcum habēbat virum ac mulierem cum virgine. Mē rēctā petit, et rem omnem aperit. “Ellam! quae mihi erat dēspōnsa. Propter meī amōrem nōndum voluit nūbere: ēn pater māterque ejus! Tūne nōlis, Ō ere! hanc meam familiam mēcum revehere? Omnēs sunt tuī cupidissimī.” “Ego sānē volō,” inquam: “sed quot post hōrās?” “Jam sunt parātī,” respondet: “ad tenuem comportandam supellectilem vix sēmihōrā opus est.” 322. Fateor, haec mihi nimia erant: velut in somniō esse vidēbar. Tandem ministrīs meīs dīcō: “Quod bene vortat Deus, ex intimō pectore grātulor vōbīs. Nunc, nē tempestās sē mūtet, quam celerrimē redeāmus.” Illī cum seniōribus colloquuntur; tandem renūntiant, tribus post merīdiem hōrīs esse nāvigandum. Id admīrāns, ajō nōn posse fierī. “Immō,” ajunt: “sīc erit melius, ipsō tē jūdice.”

323. Videō aliās aliāsque accēdere līntrēs, et multa inter sē parāre. Praestitūtā hōrā scapham ingredimur, quīnque virī, ūna mulier, duae virginēs, cum cane optimō, quem puerī valdē mīrātī sunt. Hospitum ūnusquisque spississimās suās vestēs indūtus est: strāgulās quoque in scaphā composuerant. Aura paulum erat adversa; sed octo līntrēs cum rōbustīs rēmigibus nōs fūne trahēbant, tribus hōrīs amplius. Simul ut Auster ventus flābat, Gelavius, multīs āctīs grātiīs, bonōs rēmigēs valēre jubet, mūnusculō quoque ūnumquemque prōrētam honōrat, sed tantā rēs trādīdit celeritāte, ut, quid dederit, nesciam scrībere. 324. Excussō remulcō, vėlīs nāvigāmus. Gelavius clāvum tenet. Illud tantum nārābō, mē propter concitātiōnem mentis nōn potuisse dormīre; Gelavium, quī prius nōn potuit, post aliquot hōrās dormīvisse optimē. Jūcundissimam sēnsī noctis auram, et dē futūrō meditābar, nōn sine precibus ac grātiīs Deō oblātīs. 325. Prīmā cum lūcē „montis nostrī figūram” agnōscō. Tandem Austrō cessante, Subsōlānus ventus surgit vehementior, torquetque nōs nimium ad sinistram. Equidem nōlēbam tam pretiōsum onus vel minimō perīculō committere: igitur, quoniam nēmō omnium erat invalidus, in hortōrum portum dīrēxī cursum. Ibi sūmptō mātūtīnō cibō, scapham Gelaviō commīsī, cum patre,

quandō faveat ventus, circumdūcendam: ego cum cēterīs domum revertor, collēs ēscendēns. Nōs ante merīdiem cavernās assequimur: illī sērius perveniunt. 326. Summam autem rūpem dum pervādimus, fistulā canendō recolligō gregem. Dēsunt duo tantum ē jūniōribus. Hōs crāstinō diē Totopillus ācerrimē anquīsītōs recuperat, cane adjūtōre. Sīc illa rēs faustum habuit exitum.

---

## CAPUT (XII.) DUODECIMUM.

327. Nōmina novae familiae hīc libet nārrāre. Gelaviī pater erat *Pachus*, soror *Laris*. Spōnsa autem Gelaviī *Fenis* appellābātur; hujus parentēs *Calefus* et *Upis*. Upim crēdidī vix amplius quadrāgintā quattuor habēre annōs, et neque Pachum neque Calefum exsuperāre quīnquāgintā. Bīduum praeparandīs nūptiīs dēstinantur; quae quidem omnia ipsīs relinquo. Nūntiō tamen parentibus per interpretēs meōs,—sī quid vestis apud mē sit, quod ūtendum velint sūmere propter filiās suās, vel sī quae dē cavernīs videantur prō cubiculīs commodae, nē graventur quidvīs mē rogāre.

328. Inter haec maximō cum gaudiō accurrit Totopillus, nūntiatque sē ālitēs trēs, ex eō genere quod posset mānsuēscere, cēpisse vīvōs. Atquī nōn erant phāsiānī, neque, quantum ego poteram intellegere, ōtidēs; sed nostrātium gallōs gallīnāsque potius referēbant, quamquam longē erant grandīōrēs augustiōrēsque, ac sānē splendidī. Equidem Gallum Indicum prō nōmine indidī. Libenter crēdebam, hoc avium genus numerō ōvōrum apprīmē excellere: tum mānsuēfacienda dēcernō. Mās ūnus erat, duae fēminae: nesciebam, anne parēs numerō conjugēs esse dēbērent: sed Totopillō imperāvī, asservāret omnēs summā cum sēdilitāte, daretque operam, ut prōlēs gignerētur plūrima ac mānsuēta. Ipsum erat genus alitum, quod ōlim mihi Gelavius dēnotāverat. 329. Quandō autem frūctuārium meum intrō, fūrēs ibi videō rēs dēspoliāsse. Cocōrum aliquot nucēs, sacculō quōdam discissō, abreptae fuerant: id sine dubiō macacōrum erat opus. Atque antea, mē absente, ūnam nucem surripuerat macacus, neque, quī rem vīdit Totopillus, poterat prohibēre. Aliās rēs mīrē disjectās suīs ē locīs invenīmus: fēlēs inculpat Totopillus. Equidem nōn crēdō: sed ille urget vehementer, petitque ut liceat ūnam reservāre fēlem cum pusillō mare, cēterās abigere: ego vērō, nē nimium adversārer, tandem permīsī.

330. Explōrātīs cavernīs, trēs prō conjugālibus cubiculīs dēstinantur: sed quoniam opera quaedam prius vidēbantur necessāria, meō ipsiūs cubiculō cēdō. Hoc atque mūsēum novīs nūptīs permittō, frūctuārium Calefō et Upī:

ego in armamentariō dormiō. Nūptiās suō ferē in mōre trānsigunt: sed postquam uterque pater spōnsum spōnsam suam ōsculārī jussit, (id quod sōlemnēs caerimōniās mihi vidēbātur termināre,) ego, indūtus rēgium vestītum, perōrātūrus assurrēxī, jussīque Gelavium interpretārī. 331. Dīxī mē, Deī nōmine, in meam eōs īnsulam convēxisse, ut forent beātī, mē regente: cēterum obsequentiam postulō: jamque imprīmīs, mea lingua est ab omnibus perdiscenda, et quantum fierī potest, semper dehinc hāc in īnsulā audiētur.—Tum Gelaviō et Totopillō imperō, ut prandium nūptiāle appōnātur. Post prandium, in rūpem ambulābant, mīrantēs īnsulam. Vespere, obortīs tenebrīs, ē corruptō pulvere nitrātō aliquot ego *pyrobolōs* cremāvī, gestientibus barbarīs. Sīc cōfectae sunt nūptiae.

332. Jam ego Upī mātres antilopās, ā cane vigilanter cūstōdītās, dēmōnstrāveram, et dē mulgendī arte cōnātus eram explicāre. Ea cūram lactāriam ācerrimē suscipit: duae autem erant mātres cum haediculīs, nec multum sānē expectābam lactis, quamquam corpore erant grandiorēs. Eadem *cassāvam* pānem ex maniocā et *tapiocam* optimē cōficiēbat. Mox Calefus pollicētur nova vāsa fictilia, ac meliōra quidem, sē factūrum; atque ego dē cāseō, dē bŭtyrō, dē lactis flōre, quidquid nōveram, per Totopillum cōmunicō, sed cāseum praesertim cēseō faciendum. Item plumbum liquefactum, ad vitream vāsōrum superficiem quantum cōferat, dēmōnstrō.. 333. Pachus īnstrūmenta agrī colendī atque omnem rem ferrāriam vehementer admīrātur: mox per Gelavium ēdoctus, prīnceps ēvādīt faber ferrārius, item agricola. Calefus operam figulīnam, lōrāriam, fūnāriam potius exercēbat; māteriam quoque caedēbat libēns. Totopillus, ut anteā, culīnae sē dabat: item cālō erat atque aurīga, et hortulānus et lanius et auceps. Multam hic habuit in condendīs dēcipulīs perītiam. Numquam ego nē ūnum quidem cunīculum resticulīs potuī capere; at Totopillus porcillōs plūrimōs, avēs innumerābilēs, laqueīs convolūtīs aut suspēnsīs capiēbat: hinc illae cēnārum dēliciae, illa pennārum plūmārumque cōpia, quam mīrātus eram; hinc nūperrimē gallus Indicus cum gallīnīs. Etenim Gelavius patriō suō rēgulō vestem pulcherrimam, ē multicolōribus avium plūmīs contextam, dōnō dedit, quālis in Angliā caballī pretium afferret.

334. Videō porrō mē ipsum, velut in Brazīliā quondam, oportēre nunc prō operārum praefectō esse. Nauticam quidem rem ipse prō mē suscēpī; sed in nendō ē foliīs fīlum, in complicandō cannās, juncōs,—multa faciēbant fēminae. Līnāmenta lucernārum torquent, oleam palmārum exprimunt. Ē

lignāriā fabrōrum arte plēraque jam Gelavius exercēbat et quidquid jubērem, perficiēbat prūdentissimē. In vīminibus cannisque contexendīs perītissimī erant omnēs. Hic autem locī affirmāre oportet quid dē barbarīs sentiam, nōn omnibus, sed multīs, quōs nōs Anglī nimium contemnimus. Errās valdē et pessimē cōsulis, sī longē ex ipsōrum cōnsuētūdine velīs eōs dētorquēre; attamen hunc errōrem sī dēclīnās,—sī apertē ingenuē fidēliter jūstē agās,—multō fideliōrēs tibi erunt quam quis putāverit; mox mīram sagācitātem, grātōs animōs generōsōsque, aliāsque virtūtēs neutiquam spernendās dēprehendēs summam inter barbariem. Nōs autem, heu lūgubrī fātō! nostra communicāmus vitia, illōsque dēdiscimus nātīvās ipsōrum virtūtēs; dein incertīs ex causīs inimicitiae īnsurgunt, dōnec hostīle odium mītia commercia pessumdet. 335. Prīma autem mihi cūra post nūptiās erat, ut „rēs comparātās, melius ordinārem, ūnamquamque suō in loculō. Novās ut ōllās largiōrēsque praeparāret Calefus, urgēbam, argillamque unde habēret, indicāvī. Ego autem, quoniam veterēs nōn sufficiunt arcae, majus quiddam, armārīi īnstār, eum mēnsīs interiōribus, condō. Forēs illās diaetae nauticae prīncipālis, quae suprā biennium apud mē jacuerant, prō hujus armārīi foribus adhibeō. Illud opus mē per sex diēs exercuit. Totopillum jussī cūrātissimē dēligere, quid prīmum dēbēret cōnsūmī, quid in saccharō cōservandum, quid per sē posset cōsistere. Is autem dioscōreīs, maniocīs, cucumibus in novō agellō per sē dedit operam. Quotiēs aliquid aut piscium aut carnis erat cōnsūmendū, plūrēs didicerat reservāre reliquiās, quibus „ēlixīs propter canem ac fēlēs, massae farīnulentaē vel alius cibus gustum dērīvārent idōneum. 336. Mox dē oleō ac saccharō erat prōvidendum, dēque *sagōne* (quod appellant) et dē cērā palmārum. Palmīs aliquot succīsīs, aut farīnulentam medullam aut cēram habēbāmus: folia, cannās, stīpitēs, ad suōs quidque ūsūs adhibēmus. Maximam autem et oleī et saccharī cōpiam jam nunc cēnsuī parandam. Saccharum Gelavius, optimum illud quidem, ē palmā quādam affatim dētulit: *Borassum Flābellifōrmem*, ut nunc audiō, appellant arborem. 337. Post haec dē agricultūrā dubitābam. *Zēam* quam maximē accūrandam opīnābar. *Oryzae* plantās in hortīs dīxī invēnisse Gelavium; sed illam cultūrā minus esse salūbrem crēdidī, nec posse nisi ūvidissimō in locō exercērī. Attamen Pachus et Calefus ōrant, ut sibi liceat hanc rem administrāre: itaque ipsīs remīsī, simul indicāns zēam ā mē oryzae antepōnī. 338. Pachus in cavernīs ordinandīs strēnuum sē praebet. Fēminae, adjuvante Gelaviō et māteriem suppeditante, in vestibis nectendīs valdē erant industriae; mox datō *sāpōne*, vestīmenta lavāre ēdocuī. Tandem, post

duos ferē mēnsēs, tōta mea familia suās habēbat sēdēs, satis ōrnatās, suāsque operās.

339. Tantīs adjūmentīs suffultus, poteram esse ōtiōsior, immō sēgnior: nec laetior tamen eram. “Quōrsum haec?” interrogābam. “Num tōta mea vīta sīc est dēgenda,—rēs opīmās colligendō, cōnsūmendō? An meliōrem aliquam religiōnem poterō hīs barbarīs impertīre? Tentandum est fortasse: sed linguam meam imprīmīs perdiscant oportet. Anne hōrum operā ecquandō patriam recuperābō meam?” Tālibus exercitus cōgitātiōnibus maestior fiēbam ac taciturnior: id vērō sentiō pessimī esse exemplī. Etenim nisi multum colloquar, nē Gelavius quidem nec Totopillus garrient Anglicē; tum cēterī nōn poterunt discere. Statuō fābellīs ac nārrātiunculīs, quotiēs cēnāmus, abundāre; et, cum Gelaviō imprīmīs, item cum Totopillō, dē religiōne sermōnēs habēre seorsum. 340. Equidem jam prīdem dē meā ipsīus historiā quaedam, praecipuē dē naufragiō, illīs nārrāveram; sed plūrima tunc parum intellēxere, atque iterum audīre avēbant. Nunc autem prīmum clārē dīxī quondam fuisse mē Maurī hominis barbarī servulum; id quod animōs eōrum adeō perculit, ut singula quaeque audīre cupīverint magnopere. Ego autem quae plūrēs per diēs tunc nārrāvī, nōn celārem lēctōrem meum, nisi dictū longiuscula forent. Profectō illa servitūs crūdum meum et praeferōcem animum salūbriter mītigāvit; et quoniam erum nōn crūdelem habuī, multa tum didicī sub Experientiā magistrā. Porro illā in terrā calōribus assuēvī, immō rōbustior fiēbam. Sōl ōrae Marocānae, nostrō longē acrior, aurā Ōceanī temperātur, neque nōbīs est īnsalūber, modo caput fasciā sindonis involvās, et vīnō abstineās prōrsus. Illīc quoque plūrima didicī dē frūgibus, dē oleribus, dē fruticibus, quae postea erant ūtilia. Plūrimās rēs item minōre didicī apparātū facere, quam quō apud nōs fiunt. Quippe ferrāmenta agrestia, domesticam supellectilem, īnstrūmentum culīnae, pistrīnī, fabricae,—offendī illīc rudiōra omnia; sed Necessitās inventrīx multa simpliciter cōnficit, quae fātō quōdam meō discēbam. Dēnique ipsō industriae frūctū superbiēns, strēnuus operis ēvāsī, versūtus ad excōgitandum patiēnsque labōris. 341. Sed ad rem redeō. Aliud quoque jam aequum vidēbātur. Quoniam continuus labor ad vītam nōn jam erat necessārius, fēstīque aliquot diēs ipsīs barbarīs assolent, septimus diēs (quem *prīmum* vel *Dominī* diem appellāmus) Chrīstianōrum mōre dēbēbat tandem distinguī; ex quō religiōnis aliqua posset cūra exorīrī. Itaque Kalendāriō meō recēnsō, quisnam sit “diēs Dominī” discernō: tum subditīs meīs ēdicō, ut fēstus sit hic diēs: quō diē item cōram mē post mātūtīnum

cibum congregentur. Ego rēgium monīle gerēns, precem brevem Nūminī Suprēmō prōnūntiō, ut suō hālitū mentēs nostrās pūrget; illum quoque ipsius propter virtūtēs adōrō: postea litterarum rudimenta cūctōs doceō, ut novam linguam profundius animīs dēfīgam. 342. Sī pluvia cadit, in mūsēo congregāmur; ego in tabulam ligneam crētā scrībō: sīn serēnum est caelum, ubi arēna subtilis ac plāna est potissimum, ibi radiō maximās dēsīgnō litterās. Ea imprīmīs vocābula, quae saepissimē prōnūntiantur, docuī scrībere, ut nōmina rērum, Homō, Vir, Fēmina, Canis, Pānis; ut verba commūnia, Fac, Dīc, Dā mihi, Venī, Abī; ut prōnōminā, Ego, Tū, Nōs, Vōs, Hic, Ille, Sīc.—Prīmō quidnam vellem faceremve, parum intellegēbant; sed quum īdem sonus eādem cum litterā saepius audiēbātur, sentiēbam eōs excitārī. Gelavius prīmus ōrābat, ut sibi licēret rem iterāre. Dein incipit ā Mē, Tē, Sē; item Nōs, Vōs, Hī, Hōs, Sīc, Dīc; et postquam bis terque est ā mē ēdoctus, optimē perdidicit brevia vocābula tot, quot omnibus elementīs comprehendendīs sufficerent. Mox ego tōtam litterarum seriem, in parvā chartā cōnscrip̄tam, ipsī trādō. 343. Gelavius sānē et Totopillus, quī quae dīcerem intellegēbant, longē celerius ipsās discēbant litterās. Hōs amplius in diēs ēdocuī. Proximō diē Dominicō cēterīs ipsī praecipiēbant. Tandem furor discendī cūctōs pervāsīt magnus, quāndō hōs vīdērunt et intellegere et prō magistrīs esse: sed multa nōn poterant legere, quī paucissima vocābula nōverant. 344. Mox ā mē exquīrit Gelavius, ex quānam rē cōficiātur charta. Ego dē papyrō, dē līnō, dē gossypīō faciō certiōrem; explicō item dē membrānā sīve pergamēnā. Multa postea folia grandiuscula ad mē reportat, siccāt in sōle, premit, lēvigat; juncōs item aquā mācerātōs contundit, gummī miscet, explānat, chartās meās imitāns, sed parum rēs cessit: tandem ē praegrandibus palmae cujusdam foliīs satis bonam cēnsēt habērī chartam. Dīxī huic arundinēs ac pennās avium prō calamīs scrīptōriīs sufficere, prō ātrāmentō succum sēpiae; gummī addendum, sī liquor in chartā nimis difflueret. Ille cōfirmat, numquam sibi dēfutūrum scrībendī īnstrūmentum, modo artem ipsam mente arripuerit. Jam ūnam quotīdiē hōram litterās eum doceō. Diē Dominī quaecumque nova vocābula cēterī didicerint, ea doceō scrībere; paulātimque, quum plūra intellegunt, quaedam dē religiōne incipiō inculcāre.

345. Cum Gelaviō līberius dē rēbus dīvīnīs loquēbar. Quidquid dē Deō Creātōre, dē lēge mōrālī atque officiīs, dē sāctō Deī jūdiciō, dē ejusdem in sāctōs grātiā dīcerem, id omne illī facile esse et quasi nātūrāle comperiō: etiam dē immortalitāte hūmānī animī (id quod mīrābar) jam crēdebāt. Sed



quotiēs audērem dē Chrīstō, dē Mōse, dē Jūdaeīs nārrāre, ōtiōsus audiēbat, quasi quī mīrārētur quid haec ad sē attinērent: aliquandō fortiter contrā dīcēbat. Tandem diffīsus posse mē tantīs argūmentīs suam impertīre gravitātem, abstinuī, nē profundius mē dēmergerem.

346. Nōn absurdum erit nārrāre, quantum Pachus suā arte ferrāriā fēminās adjūverit. Erant ē meō instrūmentō acūs quaedam minōrēs, item majōrēs sarcināriae. Hās Pachus multum admīrātur. Minōrēs nequit imitārī, sed utriusque fōrmae plūrēs prōcūdit grandēs, quās exacuit politque satis pulchrē, oculīs rēctē pertūsīs. Ūnīcuique fēminae dōnō dat trēs fōrmae utriusque: hīs vestēs, tegetēs, strāgula cōnsuunt.

347. Gelavius identidem quaerit ex mē, numne paeniteat mē, quod plūrēs sumus: num velim ad trēs virōs rūrsum redigī: num sī prō octo octōgintā forēmus, id oportēret dolēre: num mālim paucōrum esse quam plūrimōrum rēgulus. Nesciēbam quōrsum haec intenderent: subesse quiddam mihi vidēbātur. Dēmum interrogō dīrēcta, anne cōsultō tālia loquātur. Tum modestē ac candidē respondet: “Ō ere! tālis est hujus īnsulae jūcunditās, tālis omnium rērum cōpia atque commoditās, tālis tua ipsius benevolentia, aequitās, sapientia; ut ego populārēs meōs vellem sānē multōs hīsce rēbus mēcum fruī. Nec dubitō fore ut illī velint eadem, sī modo liceret: tuum erit dīcere, sī id licēbit numquam.” Haec quum respondēret, haesitāvī cōsiliī incertus. Mox dīxī: “sānē suīs esse illum benevolum: ego quid velle, quid nōlle dēberem, id mihi ipsī neutiquam liquere.” Notāvī postea cūctōs, ultrā quod necesse erat, ampliāre cultūram. Id ipsum anteā fēcisse Totopillum memineram, tum quum hancce colōniam clam meditābantur: itaque crēdō omnēs eandem fovēre spem, quam indicāverat Gelavius. Hoc mē male habet, nē nimis adverser, nēve periculōsum quidpiam grātificer. 348. Iterum ē Gelaviō quaerō quot novōs colōnōs tūtō posse venīre crēdat, et quānam sub lēge: num tot modo quot in ūnā familiā nōbīscum aetātem possint dēgere.—Respondet, “semper sē crēdere, fore ut ego in patriam restituar: quippe, ubi ūna vēnerit nāvis, aliquandō tandem ventūram esse alteram. Tum sē suōsque, optimō dēfēnsōre orbōs, parvam manum pollentibus barbarīs relinqui: nam hōs quoque aliquandō ventūrōs, nec, nisi aut igneīs tēlīs aut majōre catervā, posse abigī. Tot ergā novās familiās, quot firmō sint praesidiō, esse optandās. Mille virōs nimis multōs nōn fore, sed quīnquāgintā contrā ējectāmenta maris sufficere.” Interrogō, quid sibi velint maris ējectāmenta. Sīc ille explicat, ut dīcat, “virōs quī in scaphīs per cāsūs

maris hūc advehantur invītī.” Vīs ergō (inquam) quīnquāgintā importāre familiās? “Sī licēret, vellem,” respondet. At Gelavī! (rūrsus ajō) id nōn per mē licēbit. Propter locōs, arborēs, antilopās, piscēs, avēs, nūlla nōn erit pugna atrōx. Nēmō mihi obtemperābit nēmō intelleget: ego inter prīmōs occīdar. 349. “Āh, nē tālia fingās,” (inquit): “nē metuās, ere! Prius certē ego moriar: sed nōn nōstī meam gentem.” Dīc quōmodo (inquam). “Prīmum, ere! (respondet) hominēs sumus, nōn bēstiae; itaque et Deum et prīncipem venerāmur. Quisquis fortitūdine, prūdentiā, jūstitiā excellit, hunc extollere, decorāre, sequī amāmus. Tālis tū es vir, quī strēnuē ac jūstē regere callēs. Nostrōrum virōrum quot tē nōverint, tē prae nostrīs rēgulīs omnibus antepōnent. Dein, audī, quaesō, amplius. Summī nostrī rēgulī patruus est Cortops quīdam, optimus ille quidem vir, sed frātris fīlium sibi praepōnī aegrē fert, habetque factiōnem nōn parvam. Mītis est ac senior vir; fīlii autem ejus omnēs proeliō occubant. Is profectō tālem in īnsulam colōnōs dēdūcere vehementer cupiat: immō, id ipsum audīvī, ac crēdō. Jam sī hūc advenīret, ille et suōs cūctōs facile regeret, et tibi obsequerētur officiōsissimē. Tum omnia illa dē locīs, arboribus, antilopīs, ex cōnsuetūdine nostrā ac sine pugnā ordinābuntur.” Optimē causam dīcis, Ō Gelavī (respondeō) et callidē adūlāris; sed nimiā mē sōlicitūdine tōta haec rēs excrucīaret: quārē amplius dē eā nē colloquāmur.

350. Nōs autem, ita ut dīxī, cursum nostrum tenēbāmus, nec paenitēbat mē meōrum subditōrum. Singula nārrāre dē tot hominibus, longum foret. Omnia quae egomet invēneram, paulātīm discunt; sed Pachus novam rem repperit. Per Gelavium ā mē exquisīverat, unde venīret ferrum. Dīxī, ē montibus effōdī, ejusque aspectum esse, tamquam in humum īnflūxisset, massāsque humī suā gravitāte implēvisset. Post aliquot diēs laetus renūntiat, ferrum ā sē in monte repertum. Ostendit marram, novō quōdam metallō crustātam. Explicant mihi, vīdisse eum, in ulteriōre altissimī illius montis latēre, rīvulum quendam discolōrem, turbidum: marrā postquam concīverit, hanc concrēvisse crustam. Videō nōn ferream esse crustam illam, sed ahēneam. Respondeō, posse hoc multī esse ūsūs, quamquam nōn sit ferrum; amplius oportēre exāminārī. Postea doceō tāle aes colligere et fabricāre, quotiēs ūsus vēnerit.

351. Hiems hujus regiōnis praeterierat. Calidior tempestās appropinquābat; quotīdiānī imbrēs augēscēbant. Diē quōdam Mārtiī „solitō ācrius,” flābat ventus et continenter per noctem dūrāvit. Sub ipsum māne per

tenuem pluviam ego cum Totopillō cocōrum sinum versus pergēbam, atque ā speculā meā videō lintrem terrae appropinquantem. Ēgrediuntur duo virī, ūna fēmina: tot modo inerant. Videō prōtinus pīrātās nōn esse hōs: virī dēfessī esse videntur, fēmina algēscere. Haec ubi ā ventō prōtegātur, vestibus contēctam collocant: ipsī vagantur, rāmōs aspectantēs, ut quī cibum anquīrunt. 352. Pistolās mēcum habuī, sed nihil erat quod timērem. Rāmulo arboris raptim abscissō, hunc ēlātē gerēns, cum Totopillō dēscendī, ciēbamque eōs clāmōre: neque illī ā nōbīs fūgērunt. Jussī Totopillum colloquī, sī forte intellegerent. Is cito cōfirmat, esse eōs Gelaviī populārēs, ventō abreptōs, jamque famē, labōre, frīgore ēnectōs. Nōluī, in portum admissīs, sēcrēta domūs aperīre: sed jussī eum dīcere, “cibum iīs missum īrī,” et ipsum jūxtā manēre. Ego āctūtum redeō, tum Gelavium remittō cum cibō, uxōremque ejus cum spissīs siccīsque vestibus. Ipsī frūstrā cōnantur ignem fovēre. Fenis et Totopillus apud eōs morantur: Gelavius illicō ad mē redit: sīc jussī. Tum colloquimur.

353. Ego ajō: sī per ventum nōn poterunt ante noctem regredī, numquam regredī dēbēre, nē plūrēs postea in nōs reportent, pervulgātō īnsulae arcānō. —Is laudat cōsiliū meum, modo possit fierī. Mox addit: velle sē quidem plūrēs īnsulae cīvēs; sed invītōs retinēre, nisi vinciās, fore lūbricum; nam posse aliquandō scapham meam fūrārī.—Id mē perculit, nec quidquam ultrā dīxī: tamen eundem illum in sinum hospitēs coercēre statuō. Fenis autem rediēns ait, sibi illam fēminam antea nōtam esse, et vērō dīlēctam, atque ejus sē miserērī. 354. Quandō refōtī sunt, tertiō diē dē reditū cōsulitur. Erat sānē difficilis līntrī reditus, sī ventus eādē ex regiōne perstāret flāre, quamvīs clēmēter. Imperāvī ut nēmō retinēret eōs, nēmō abigeret, sed suīs relinquerentur cōsiliīs. Multās nōbīs grātiās agunt, viāticō acceptō, ajuntque velle sē, ut prīmum possint, domum redīre. Quārtō demum diē ēvānuerant, sub noctem regressī.

355. Haec erant in mēse Mārtiō, neque ego tunc suspicābar quō mē invītum dīvīna dūceret Prōvidentia: nam novōs colōnōs arcessere pertināciter nōluī, quamvīs timērem nē meīs forem inīquus: sed sollicitūdō ācris semper mē vetābat. Continuābantur mēnsēs, et nostra omnium opera. Praeteriēre suō in ōrdine geniālis pluvia ac foeda tempestās: tertium jam mihi redībat siccior aestātis pars. Nōs quidem in frūctibus colligendīs tum maximē fuimus occupātī. 356. Ēn autem ipsō Sextilī mēse, dum cum Calefō et Totopillō per rūpem incēdō, ē saltū prōdeunt duo virī barbarī.

Pistolā correptā, jubeō Totopillum eōs compellāre. Respondent, “amīcōs esse sē, et rēgem īnsulae amīcissimē petere.” Jubeō, meī honōris causā, tēla in humum prōjicere: prōjiciunt. Tunc ut amīcōs salūtō, recipere tēla jubeō, et dīcere cūr, unde, vēnerint. Totopillus, parum facile, tamen interpretātur respōnsa. Senior autem ē duōbus illīs, mītis aspectū vir, quī ferē septuāgintā habēre vidēbātur annōs, in hunc modum loquitur. “Ego sum Cortops. Cum quīndecim līntribus veniō, octo et vīgintī familiīs, ut tuā veniā cum bonā pāce cōnsīdāmus hāc in īnsulā, tibi prō summō prīncipe obtemperātūrī. Cēterōs īnfra reliquī, dum tua reportāmus jussa. Agrum autem ex tuā abundantīā ā tē ōrāmus.” Quia dē rē inopīnātā illicō respondēre erat difficile, multum salvēre jussī; hic in saltū requiēsceret paulisper: honōris causā hōs duōs meōrum apud eum relinqui: mē celeriter cum servīs cibisque reditūrum: tum nōs dē omnī hāc rē liberē collocūtūrōs. 357. Itaque dēcessī sōlus. Prōditum mē crēdidī. Gelavius sine dubiō nūntium Cortopī per illōs virōs mīserat, quoniam mē obstinātum sēnsit. Tamen sī trīgintā virī armātī jam in terram expositī erant, per vim tēlōrum male resistō palam: arte et sollertiā est opus. Aut suādēre dēbeō ut prōtenus abeant, aut dēlībērāre quō tandem pactō minimō cum perīculō maneant, sīve ad tempus, sīve in perpetuum. 358. Interim īrāscor Gelaviō et incipiō objūrgāre. Ille admīrāns, obnīxē ac simplicissimē negat quidquam nūntiī sē aut mīsisse aut missum velle; idque iterāvit tam ānxiē, ut nequīverim persistere. Jam hunc cum Pachō cibōs ac dōna aliquot relātūrum mittō. Ipse, rēgālia assūmēns, meminī Fenim fuisse fēminae illīus amīcam. Igitur, missā ad eam Larī, arcessō, et īrātā vōce interrogō, quidnam hospitī dīxerit. Illa, quamquam male loquerētur, tamen, quae dīcēbam, satis intellēxit. 359. Effūsa in lacrimās respondet, sē, ab amīcā suā rogitātam, anne commodē sē hīc habēret, dīxisse; “Immō optimē: sānē sē esse beātissimam sub benignissimō ac jūstissimō prīncipe in jūcundissimā īnsulā.” Tālia eam velle dīcere, sermōne quamvīs inconditō, intellēxī. “An nihil aliud dīxistī?” interrogō. “Sānē plūrima,” inquit. Quid ergō? “At ego nesciō.”—Nōne tū nūntium ad Cortopem mīsistī, ut hūc venīret? “Certē nihil tāle audērem (inquit) neque ausa sum.” Sed nēminem tū hūc invītāstī? “Ōh ere (respondet), invītāvī nēminem; tantum, ut crēdō, amīcae meae dīxī,—Vellem ipsam et quam plūrimōs meōrum sub optimō tē prīncipe esse beātōs, velut mēmet.” Postquam experior nihil ultrā scīscitandō extorquērī, vultum compōnō: bonō animō eam esse jubeō: dein ēgredior. 360. Incēdēns simul reputō. Sī rē vērā propter fāmam meī, nōn propter cupiditātem malam, tot virī veniunt;

tum vērō, sī prōrsus eōs vēnisse nōlim, ipse mēmet objūrgāre dēbeō, quod nōn fuerim injūstior; neque adeō sunt timendī, quī ad imperāta perferenda festīnant. Meae mē laudēs fortasse ēmolliēbant: nūlla convincitur prōditiō. Tum illud surgit:—quattuor ope virōrum numquam hīc nāvem fabricābor: sī redīre ad patriam volō, per plūrēs id dēbet cōficī. Quid sī nunc plūrēs Deus ipse ad mē mīsīt? Egone illōs abigam, in aeternam mēmet redāctūrus barbariem? Reputāns tālia, cum aliō prōrsus animō ad Cortopem revertī, quī cibōs jam cōnfēcerat, et cane meō, propter offulās blandientī, sē oblectābat. 361. Nūntiātur mihi, cūctam ejus plēbem esse in portū hortōrum; sub arboribus ā calōre prōtegī: habēre sēcum maximum zēae atque oryzae numerum, item maniocārum; coria quoque comportāre et maximās vestēs, tegetēsque quae malignam imbrium vim possint arcēre: quadrāgintā duōs virōs puerōsve esse, septem et quīnquāgintā fēminās: Cortopis omnēs dictō oboedīre: ipsum Cortopem mihi profectō velle submittī, cōstanter autem ā mē ōrāre sēdem idōneam.—Respōnsum fēcī plēnum benevolentīā. Pollicitus sum, illicō mē dēmissūrum, quī ligna secāret in focōs, atque alterum quī plūra ꝑ cibō commodaꝑ distribueret, velut oleum, sāl, arōmata: tertium quī ōllās cācabōsque ferret. Interim mē dē sēde dandā meditātūrum. —Mox nōs redīmus cavernās versus, duo illī virī ad suōs. Quandō animadvertī auram extrā ōrdinem ā merīdiē continuārī modicam, melius cēnseō ut in scaphā ꝑ Gelavius cum patre socerōqueꝑ supellectilem ac cibum portet. Gelavius ꝑ minōribus gemmīs fulgēnsꝑ, mē repraesentat. Hic lignum secat, illī prandium properant. 362. Ego autem sub sēricā umbellā propter fastum ac calōrem tēctus, ad Caprīnum jugum dēflectō, atque, inde prōspectāns, novae colōniae dēcernō longam illam ōram subter jugō, cum prīmō sinū citrā Lūnātam Viam, sī eō quoque egērent. Sed ōra illa facile suffectūra erat. Postulō ut septimus quisque diēs prō fēstō habeātur; ut, quot possint, illō diē cōram mē veniant; ut Cortops quater in annō, ad minimum, mē venerātūrus adeat; ut mea lingua prō imperātōriā linguā aestimētur, quam cūctī, ut prīmum possint, discant ēloquī. Hīs acceptīs lēgibus, proximō diē circumrēmigant, suamque capiunt sēdem.

363. Paulō post clārius dēnotō; quidquid sit illā in ōrā, Cortopis esse, sine ūllā exceptiōne. Quāslibet avēs, quōslibet piscēs, illā tantum in ōrā, prō suīs oportēre eum aestimāre. Sīn ultrā līneam altissimī jugī Caprīnī voluerit vēnārī aut frūctum terrae percipere, id mēcum amplius dēliberandum. Sī quid in monte velit sēminārī, id līberum esse; et quidquid coluerit quispiam,

id fore cultōris.—Hās quoque lēgēs comprobārunt: tum ego sollicitūdinem dēpōnēbam.

364. Mox ligōnēs, secūrēs, dolābrās plūrimās dēligō, item marrās aliquot et cultrōs mēnsālēs, quōs Cortopī dōnō dem, suae plēbī ad suum arbitrium distribuendōs. Cultrum, furcam et cochleāre, splendidiōre speciē, ipsī dēstinō Cortopī. Saccharī aliquantum et oleī addō, item arōmata. Hās rēs ille cupidissimē ac multīs cum grātiīs accipit. Tum, nē gemmīs Gelavius praelūceat, monīlī pulchrius variātō exōrnō Cortopem. 365. Posteā aliud quiddam mihi arrogō:—Sī hostēs hanc in īnsulam dēscendant, ut sub Cortope cūctī imperāta mea perficiant, cōferantque subsidia bellī.—Id quoque facile concēditur. Tum citrea atque aurea māla, cocōs nucēs ūvāsque siccātās, et cōservātārum ananassārum ōllās ad Cortopem dēmittō.

---

## CAPUT (XIII.) TREDECIMUM.

366. Jamque post violentam concitātiōnem rēs ad suōs cursūs rediēre. Sēdecim post diēbus aestās procellīs abrumpitur: piget mē quod cavernīs hospitēs carent. Ego autem dē meā linguā intrūdendā praesertim sollicitābar. Prīma mea colōnia et linguam nōn absurdē et litterās parcē didicerat: nunc meditor quō possim pactō eāsdem novae plēbī impertīre. Quandō cum Gelaviō colloquor, rogat ille, utrum velim eum assentīrī oboedienter, an loquī liberē. Liberē autem (inquam) loquī. 367. Tum īnfit: “Nōs, ere, tua familia, tē et multum audīvimus et valdē amāmus: igitur in linguā litterisque prōfēcimus melius. Tamen nimius fuit ille cōnātus, nec nisi propter tuī amōrem tolerābilis. Duās rēs ūnā postulās, utramque difficilem. Crēde mihi, longē praestat, ut dē linguā tuā paulum differātur. Nostram potius nōs linguam prīmum litterīs exprimere discāmus: postea quidquid ē tuā didicerint linguā (et discent multa paulatim) cupient ipsī scrībere.” 368. Haec audiēns, quasi obstupuī. Quid? (inquam): tūne linguam barbaram vīs litterīs effingere, et quantum possīs, in perpetuum dēfīgere?—Ācriter respondet: “Nostrae tū, ere, nescius es linguae, quī barbaram vocās. Lingua est cōpiōsa, dēlicāta, subtilis, tenerrima, sonō mollissima, ūsū gravissima: immō, quantum conijcere possim, tuā sānē praestantior.” Quid ais? inquam. Ego nōn nōvī tuam linguam: rēctē dīcis. Sed cūr crēdis eam meae antecellere? “Ēn (ait) quandō tū Nōs dīcis, ego illud Nōs per quattuor vocābula interpretor. Nam aut *Ego ac tū* valet, aut *Ego atque ille*, aut *Ego ac vōs*, aut *Ego atque illī*. Hīc quattuor sunt, quae tua lingua in ūnum illud Nōs cōfundit; nostra pulcherrimē distinguit *Bini*, *Bili*, *Binir*, *Bilir*. Nōne hanc rēctē dīcō magis hīc esse subtilem, accūrātam, cōpiōsam?” Assentior. “Item Vōs (pergit dīcere) duās cōfundit rēs; nam aut valet *Tū cum cēterīs quōs compellō*, aut *Tū cum quibusdam absentibus*. Hīc iterum nostrātēs duo habent vocābula, *Vinir*, *Dinir*. Jam tū dē fronte contrahendā loqueris; ūnam hanc ā tē didicī locūtiōnem: nōs quattuor habēmus verba simplicia. Nam frontem contrahō aut propter lūcem nimiam, aut meditābundus, aut cum maerōre, aut cum malitiā: nōs quadrifāriam dīcimus ac simpliciter.” Perge

ultrā, (inquam). “Deinde tū (inquit) dē *dēmittendō capite* loqueris: nōs septem vel amplius modīs hoc prōnūntiāmus. Nam caput dēmittō, prīmum ut hostīle tēlum vel rāmum arboris dēvitem: deinde, ut venerer aliquem; tum, ut acūtius prōspeculer; quārtō, ut assēsum dēnotem; quīntō, propter pudōrem; sextō, per obstinātam contumāciam; septimō, in aquās dēscēnsūrus; item octāvō, saltāns. Ēn octo nostrātium vocābula, *Meti, Rodic, Fiarilic, Duthic, Lianic, Shanfic, Madiric, Reutic*.”—Immō, Gelavī! (inquam interpellāns) linguam tū meam parum nōvistī: nam nōs *Annuere* adhibēmus, assēsum capitis dēmissī dēnotantēs. 369. “Vērissimē dīxistī illud, ere! (respondet). Nōn nōvī tuam linguam, neque umquam plēnē nōverō, nisi sī possem renāscī, et cum lacte mātis cārissimās vōcēs haurīre; nisi possem cum puerīs iterum collūdere, in vestrīs lūdīs litterāriīs discere; nisi possem in contiōne sapientium fervida captāre verba, atque in forō, ubi rēs vēnditis, multōs per mēnsēs nūndinārī. Nisi dē novō possem mātis, sorōris cārītatem discere, et suāvēs amōris susurrōs nunc prīmum tuā in linguā audīre, numquam sīc ego complectar eam, ut tū corde atque animō complecteris.” Fateor; vehementiā ejus perculsus sum. Nihil tāle expectāveram: itaque reticuī. Tum addit,—“Ō ere, nōlī succēnsēre: sed ita sē rēs habet. Lingua tua nōbīs in meram mentem venit, quasi cum frīgidā lūce. Nostra pectus tangit, animum ērigit. Ut tuam nōs, quantum possīmus, discāmus linguam, aequissimē postulās; sed nostram quae tenerrimīs nōs memoriīs perfundit, nōlī sīc surripere nōbīs, ut tuam mancē apprehendāmus, fortasse foedē lacerēmus.”

370. Numquam antea suspicātus eram, quam sua cuique gentī pretiōsa esset lingua. Post paulō fassus sum, male mē cōsuluissē, Gelavium rēctē iudicāre: itaque jubeō, sī possit, populārēs suōs ēdocēre, quō pactō ipsōrum linguam litterīs exprimant. Tum ille ā mē opem ōrat. Dīcit, meīs litterīs illōrum sonōs nōn omnīnō congruere; propterea, sē haerēre. Equidem nōn modo Lusitānicē multa dē orthographiā (quam appellant) cōgitāveram; sed prius, quandō Maurūsiē discēbam loquī, omnia Eurōpaeīs cōscribēbam litterīs, mūtātīs additīsque aliquot fōrmīs. 371. Igitur ferē centum audītīs perscriptīsque vōcibus, tandem quum autumat omnēs linguae sonōs sē mihi prōnūntiāsse, facile eī tōtam seriē explicō. Hoc ubi plūrifariam probāvit, crēdiditque rem cōfectam, tōtum gregem nostrum ēdocet; illī alacriter arripiunt. Postea, diē Dominī, quandō cēterī conveniunt, incipit hōrulam dare huic rei impertiendae. Ego autem illō diē contiōnor dē rēbus plūribus, quae possint mentēs stimulāre, excolere, firmāre. 372. Illud laetus videō,



nōn esse sēgnēs hōs barbarōs neque ventrī aut tēmētō dēditōs. Etenim vėlōcēs esse et armīs strēnuōs, id cūctī prō pūblicō officiō aestimābant. Sed lūdōs sēdulō iīs commendō. Fēminae nostrae quotīdiē natābant, sed suō in grege: nōs virī jam „dumtaxat extrā portum,“ natāmus. Ego sīc jussī: namque ipsīs nōn interesse vidēbātur. 373. At ego jam dēcernō, igneōrum tēlōrum ūsum Gelaviō ac Totopillō impertīre, quō tūtior fīam. Id summō cum gaudiō accipiunt, ut documentum fīdūciae meae. Pulveris nitrātī quia parcissimus fueram, aliquantum etiam restābat. Hoc reparārī posse dēspērāns, quidquid potest sine dispendiō pulveris docērī, ēdoceō, atque illī ācerrimē artem meam assequī cōnantur. Totopillus dē pulveris illīus compositiōne ācriter exquīrit. Carbōnem facile explicō; sed quid sit nitrum, quid sulfur, nequeō interpretārī; nec, propter immāne perīculum, vellem eum compōnendī experīmentīs sē objicere. Itaque hoc prō arcānō relinquitur. 374. Hāc aestāte ego ac Pachus in pēnsilibus lectīs super rūpe dormīverāmus: cēterī trēs cum uxōribus mālunt in cavernīs manēre; neque ego prohibeō. Pachum prō comite mēcum assūmō.

375. Inter haec subita rēs iterum rotam meae vītae convertit, et dēmum mē parentibus, mihi patriam reddidit. Ante lūcem, tertiō ante Īdūs Decembrēs, bombus cannōnis mē expergēfacit. Iterātur ter quaterque. Agnōscō signum nāvis, quae opem in perīculō ōrat. Prīmā lūce per prōspeculum contemplor, videōque nāvem magnam, quae in arēnīs longē ā terrā haeret. Arbitror illās ipsās esse arēnās, ubi, quattuor ante annīs amplius, nostra nāvis sē impēgit, cōnfrēgitque mālōs. Attentius observāns, crēdō ūnum mālōrum esse cōnfractum. Mox vēxillum discernō: id erat Anglicum. Tum mīrō gaudiō, maerōre, spē afficior. 376. Mare erat tranquillissimum: vix ūlla tum flābat aura. Aciē oculōrum contentā, per prōspeculum nihil videō mōtūs neque īstantis perīculī. Tum illud succurrit: Quidnī possumus, plūribus connītentibus scaphīs, remulcīs nāvem ex arēnā dētrahere? Gelavium jubeō properāre ad Cortopem, et meō nōmine impēnsē rogāre, ut līntrēs suās cūctās cum rēmigibus rōbustissimīsque remulcīs ad nāvem mitteret, atque „ā mē dicta,“ eōs accipere jubēret. 377. Prōtenus ego cum Totopillō et Calefō Pachōque in scapham ingredior: nōs quattuor rēmigāmus, quoniam ventus deest. Cibum nōndum gustāverāmus, sed comportārī jussī quidquid esset in prōmptū. Prīmī ad nāvem pertingimus, mox Anglicā vōce exquīrō, ubinam sit praefectus nāvis. Illī mīrābundī, et laetantēs quamquam tantō in perīculō, eum ēvocant. Nārrat mihi, id quod ipse dispexeram. In lītus, nocte utique tranquillā, incurrerant, frēgerantque

mālum anteriōrem. Etiam tum haerēbant, timēbantque nē surgente ventō obruerentur. Dīcō mē jussisse līntrēs rēmīgēsque tractūrōs venīre, sī forte id opis esse posset. Tum certiōrem mē facit, fundum nāvis esse solidum, neque admīsisse aquam. Mox ā magistrō bolidem petiī, et ā scaphā meā tentābam aquās. Sex ulnae nāvī sufficiēbant. Meāns remeānsque in scaphā, submarīnī aggeris fīnem dīmidiō ferē hōrae satis comperī. Jam autem tredecim pervēnēre līntrēs. Magister mē docēbat, quot remulcīs esset opus: ipse affīgit, fūnēsque ex suō addit. Saburram trāmovet, partēs nāvis afflīctās levāns. Ejus dicta per mē et Gelavium trāduntur. Rēmīs incumbunt, gravius quam violentius prīmō. Remulcī tenduntur, strīdent. Exclāmat Gelavius: crēdō eum prohibuisse nimium intendī. Iterum; ter; quater incumbunt: dēmum nōn frūstrā esse videō. Mōtus quidem nāvis exiguus appāret, augēscit, continuātur: tandem clāmor gaudentium exoritur: nāvis vadō dētrahitur et prōtenus bene natat. 379. Tum magister ā mē gubernātōrem petit, quī in tūtum aliquem locum nāvem dēdūcat, dōnec mālus erit resartus. Multum ille mīrātur, quum respondeō, “nēmīnī cēterōrum quidquam dē hōc marī esse nōtum, mē solum lītoris aliquam habēre nōtitiam.” Rēmīgibus per Gelavium indicō, spērāre mē rem rēctē prōcessūram: multās mē agere grātiās: sed parātī sint iterum adjuvāre, sī iterum sit opus. Interim aura diurna ā marī surrēxerat, et, vėlīs aliquot praetentīs, tardiusculē movēbātur nāvis. Ego in scaphā, profunditatem semper praetentāns, flūmen versus, in quod prīmam meam dīrēxī ratem, sēnsim dēdūcēbam. Sed quoniam tempus procellōsum longē aberat, suāsī ut ancoram extrā jaceret, deinde per suōs nautās explōrāret ōstium. Assēnsus est. Tum ego meōs virōs cum scaphā domum remittō, ipse in nāvī maneō colloquiī grātiā. 380. Prōtenus magister quaerit, anne novum possit mālum apud nōs emere. Respondeō: “Immō, secāre. Esse plūrimās suprā arborēs, mālīs idōneās; quās succīsās posse facile in vallem dētrūdī, et, in rīpā flūminis dēdolātās, aquā vehī ad nāvem. In ōstiō flūminis tūtissimum esse portum vel furentibus procellīs, modo profunditās aquae nāvem admittat.” 381. Jam quaerit, anne cibōs praebēre possīmus. Id vērō prōmittō. Illicō jubet prandium omnibus appōnī liberius, nārratque parcius per plūrēs diēs comēdisse cūnctōs, quia metuerant inopiam. Ego vērō interrogō, quārē hās in regiōnēs vēnerint, utrum gnārī an invītī. Ille postquam quaedam imperāvit, seorsum ductum humilī mē vōce compellat. 382. “Tū mē (inquit) valdē adjūvāstī; ergō liberē loquar. Mercēs ego Anglicās ā Bristolīā ad Jamaicam dēbēbam portāre. Propter vim ventī in Corragiam Hībernōrum cōfugere sum coāctus.” Ibi aliquot meōrum

nautārum majōre mercēde mihi surripit alius quīdam nāvis magister. Tum aliōs ex necessitatē accēpī, quālēs ipse locus dabat, mercēnariōs nautās, quōrum trēs erant valdē improbī. Multa mōlientēs, sēditionem serēbant et bonōrum pervertēre mentēs. Tandem coortī, in catēnās mē dedēre, quum maximē erāmus in Occidentālis Indiae marī. Quid dē mē facere voluerint, nesciō; sed cēterī nautae nihil gravius in mē cōsulī patiēbantur. Oculōs Eurōpaeōrum fugientēs, inter barbarōs (ut opīnor) sē volēbant recondere, crēdēbantque sē posse dītēscere, dīvēditīs meīs mercibus. Ūnā ex ōrā optimam aquae cōpiam assecūtī sunt, absentibus barbarīs; mox, ubi cibōs volēbant emere, ortō jūrgiō, duo ē nāvālibus sociīs occīsī sunt, quōrum ūnus callidissimus erat ē tribus illīs improbīs. Cēterī, quī cum scaphā erant, aegrē effūgēre. Duo illī, quī restābant ē pessimīs, hominēs imperītī, vī ac minīs ac cōnsuetūdine quādam nāvem regēbant, quamquam caelī ac maris et chartārum marinārum ignārī. Cibōs iterum ac ter frūstrā quaesivēre: propter inopiam alimentōrum cēterī murmurābant: dēmum proximā nocte sub aurōram in arēnās incurrimus. Tum vērō imperītie hōrum hominum succēnsentēs, nautae eōs catēnīs vinciunt, mē liberant, ōrantque ut sontēs pūniam, cēterōs ā perīculō liberem. Ego statim cannōnēs opem ōrantēs personāre jussī: illud restat, ut sī possim, quod male factum est, resarciam. Jam autem, dīc mihi, (quod maximī est) quot gradūs terrestris longitudinis hīc habeāmus. 383. Paene rīsī, quum haec mē interrogāret. Respondeō: illum ā meō vestītū posse conjectāre, quantā in barbariē verser. Locī sānē lātitudinem, stēllīs observātīs, cognōsse mē; longitudinem (quam appellant mathēmaticī) prōrsus nescīre. Id tantum mē habēre cognitum, ad Occidentem nōs dēgere, ultrā ultimum Orinocōnis ōstium.—Ille ait, etiam hoc cognōsse, magnī referre. 384. Mox interrogō, anne velit mē in patriam reportāre. Is cōfirmat, maximō illud sibi gaudiō fore; nec grātiīs modo revectūrum; nam propter servātā nāvem magnum mihi ā sē suisque dēbērī praemium. Tum jussī, dē «hōc quod dīcēbam» reticēre; jamque mē in suā scaphā ad terram vehere, ut dē cibīs comparandīs imperārem. 385. Ūndēvīgintī virī in nāve erant: carnem recentem Anglīs crēdō fore libentibus. Totopillō dīcō, sī laqueīs porcillōs, leporēs avēsve possit capere, quam plūrimōs capiat, ac vīvōs. Pachum ac Calefum, trahā ac trahulā ēductā (illā duōbus jūmentīs, hāc ūnō) mēcum ad collēs Caprīnōs venīre jubeō; Larim Fenimque in calathōs plūrēs fiscellāsque compōnere dioscōreās, maniocās, banānās, dactylōs, aliōsque frūctūs vel legūmina: Upim cāseōs prōmere quōs habēbat plūrimōs, et quidquid piscium sale

conditum reservāverat,—sī id quoque nautīs ūsuī foret. Ōva gallīnācea mihi nōn erant: pullīs avibus parcendum dēcrēvī. Dēnique Gelavium ad Cortopem mittō, ōrāns ut sī quid aut zēae aut orȳzae possit sine suōrum dētrīmentō trādere, id meā grātiā nāvī convehendum praebeat.

386. Pachum ac Calefum jam summā in rūpe offendī opperientēs. Caprārum silvestrium agrōs versus īmus rēctā, usque eō ubi propter asperitatem saxōrum nullā erat trahīs via. Tum Pachum jubeō quam occultissimē, mōre barbarōrum, pōne saxa īnserpere, dōnec gregem aliquem intrā tēlī conjectum videat. Ignipultās duās iīs trādideram portandās: ūna erat bituba mea. Ambās jam sufferciō. Ut Pachus recurrit, prōgredior cautē, etsī neutiquam fugācēs erant hae ferae. Ē duplice tubō bis maximā celeritāte jaculātus, duās antilopās occīdō. Tōtus grex aufugit; sed propter fōrmam locōrum nōn poterat extrā jactum extemplō ēvānēscere. Alterā ignipultā dē Calefō arreptā, tertium prōtenus dējiciō mortuum: is mās fuit, grandis ille quidem, quī restiterat hostem cōnspectūrus. Jūmenta nostra paxillīs dēstināverāmus: eō jam necesse erat praedam dēportāre. Calefus et Pachus, connīsī, satis aegrē humerīs suīs caprās, ūnam post alteram, dēferunt. Caprum antilopam videō nimium fore: quārē egomet, onerī submissus, adjuvō. Sīc per trium virōrum nīsūs hic quoque in trahulam compōnitur: dein prōtinus domum eōs remittō. 387. Egomet lacum versus properō, ut ānserēs vel ferum olōrem reportem. Ipsam ad lacūs ōram numquam pertigeram: ibi nunc olōrēs videō maximōs. Anne piscēs comedant, anne carō sit bona, nesciō; crēdō tamen piscēs ē dulcī aquā nōn nocitūrōs gustuī. Itaque igne conjectō maximum ālitem, quī vix in margine erat aquae, occīdō; quem, quamquam canis nōn aderat, facile assequor. Hunc reportāvī humerīs meīs, incommodum sānē onus. 388. Ad cavernās Cortopem offendō, quī collocūtūrus dē zēā et orȳzā vēnerat. Ā Pachō vult discere, quanta sit secundae spēs messis; item ā Totopillō quantam vim rādīcum esculentārum, aut ā nōbīs satam, aut genitam in vallibus, dēbeāmus exspectāre. Certior dē hīs rēbus factus, dēcrēvit et zēam et orȳzam praebere satis liberāliter. Eum magnō cum honōre excipiō, ōrōque ut ad cēnam maneat. Plūrēs rēs in mūsēō nunc prīmum eī exhibeō. 389. Inter haec pervēnit Totopillus cum nāvis magistrō. Magister breviter ait, Ōstium flūminis ā sē esse explōrātum; satis superque esse aquae profundae; crās cum aestū maris velle sē intrāre. Ē valle Totopillum in rūpe ā sē vīsum esse; (is dē cunīculīs ibi satagēbat:) sē cursum suum ad eum dīrēxisse, ut ad mē dūcerētur.—Totopillus sēcum habuit in sacculīs quattuor vīvōs, ūnum

mortuum cunīculum; dein ego dēmōnstrō magistrō, quōs eī cibōs dēstinem. 390. Is dē cēterīs rēbus multās agit grātiās; sed ūnum illum ait sufficere antilopam, duās fēminās nōlle. Nam tantam carnis vim corruptum īrī, nisi properē comedātur; nautīs autem quī decem per diēs parcius pāstī essent, īnsalūberrimum fore, sī multum subitō carnis habērent. Sed ego (ait) in rūpe mānsuētum vīdī gregem: quidnī possīs duōs trēsve haedōs cum pābulō vīvōs nāvī impōnere, quandō in eō erimus ut solvāmus?—Tum videō errāsse mē per properantiam: porrō mālus novus erat caedendus. Igitur respondeō: “Bene est: quidquid poterimus, faciēmus.” Tamen dē meīs haedīs aegrē ferēbam: nam quidquid mihi cicur factum est, et ē meā manū pāscēbātur, id jugulāre dolēbat mē. 391. Dē olōre oblītus eram facere mentiōnem: nunc sententiam mūtō. In Cortopem convertor, interprete Gelaviō. Multō cum honōre illum maximō ālite dōnō, item duābus mortuīs antilopis, ut suīs rēmigibus, sī sibi libeat, praebeat epulum. Addō, nōlle mē oryzzam ab ipsō ōrāre, nisi esset, unde supplērem. Is laetus accipit, pollicēturque lintrēs ad convehendum crās mittere.—Tum ā Totopillō quaerō, numve avēs porcillōsve cēperit. Nōndum ūllōs, respondet.—Igitur differās (ajō) hanc rem, dōnec resarciātur nāvis: nunc ex ūnō illō lepore cēnam apparā.—Id ille properat. 392. Cōfectā cēnā, Cortops ad suōs vult extemplō redīre. Ego cum magistrō trāns rūpem ambulō, ut arborēs mālō idōneās oculīs lūstret. Quattuor, quās dēnotat, crētā distinguō: hae erant in saltū meō. Dēscendēns ad flūmen quīntam animadvertī, ejusdem ferē magnitudinis, quae pōpulī īnstā gerēbat. Hanc ut propiōrem commendō, atque ille comprobat. Tum ajō: “Fabrum tū nāvis tuae crās hūc mittitō: sī quid jūmentīs opus fuerit, ego per virōs meōs praebebō.”—“Ēheu! (respondet): faber meus cum īsignissimō illō improbōrum fuit ā barbarīs occīsus: idque mē male habet, quod nēmō apud mē est, quī arborem in mālum dēdolāre calleat. Sed nisi inter vōs quispiam est fabrīlī arte exercitus, nautae meī, ut ut poterunt, caedent.” Tum nārrō et mē et quōsdam ē meīs ex necessitāte multam reī fabrīlī dedisse operam; et posse nōs, sī velit, hanc rem aliquō tandem modō perficere. Id libēns audit: ait sē, mālō, quī frāctus sit, in rīpam expositō, alterum, ejusdem plānē mēnsūrae, imperātūrum mihi; pretiumque ejus, pecūniā aestimātum, in acceptī tabulam mihi relātūrum. Tum ego, quantum possum, spondeō: is ad suam scapham abit, in nāvem reditūrus; ego ad cavernās. 393. Posterō diē sine ūllā difficultāte Pachus et Calefus arborem illam succīdunt et rāmōs amputant. Nāvis cum mātūtīnō aestū ōstium subit flūminis, mālumque illum

cōnfrāctum in rīpam excutit. Ibi ego accūrātissimē omnēs ejus partēs mētior cōnscrībōque. Fabrīlia nāvis īnstrūmenta recognōscō: mōlem quandam cochleātā mūtuo et maximās cōnfībulās plūrēs; quoniam utrōque in fīne inter operandum dēbeat arbor firmiter dēstinārī. Dolābrās item et runcīnās inde sūmō, nē, sī nostrae in caedendō retundantur, absūmātur tempus. Ego quidem vidēbar plūs festīnāre quam magister; ināniter crēdō: sed spem redeundī oblātā tandem, mōra ūnīuscujusque diē vidēbātur imminuere. Videō crās operam perfectum īrī: igitur Totopillum jubeō, quam mātūrrimē possit, testūdinem capere; mox pābulum haedīnum in nāvem congerere. Enimvērō crās, id est, tertiō diē, ut spērāvī, mālum perfēcimus. Vespere Gelavium ad Cortopem mittō, nūntiātūrum, mē gravissimā dē rē velle colloquī, quae cum plēbe suā dēbeat cōmmūnicārī; quārē in ejus honōrem, nisi quid nōlit, ipsum mē ad eum māne ventūrum. Respondet, libentī fore.

394. Māne, rēgium vestītum gerēns, meā in scaphā, comitantibus Calefō, Pachō, Gelaviō, circumnāvigāvī ad Cortopem. Is mē multō cum honōre excipit. Tumulum quendam vel tribūnal ē caespīte exstrūxerant, in quod mēcum ascendit, et in arundināceō quōdam pictō tapēte mē requiēscere jubet. Tum ad contiōnem suōrum verba facit,—crēdō ut mē iīs commendet: illī conclāmant plaudētēs. Assurgō et manibus gesticulor: nihil aliud poteram. Dein dēscendimus, et per Gelavium ōrō, ut Cortops mēcum et Calefō seorsum colloquātur. Jam mē aperiō, Calefō interprete. 395. Ajō, mē omnibus īnsulae meae cīvibus summam optāre prōsperitātem: hanc ut affirmem, praecipuae mihi esse cūrae. Illum, quippe virum nōbilem, mītem, seniōrem et diū nōtum, quāsdam propter causās mē ipsō fortasse melius eōrum fortūnīs praesessūrum: quārē ūnā sub condiōne esse mihi in animō, ut dē prīncipātū illī cēdam.—Prīmō nōn crēdit Calefum rēctē interpretārī. Bis terque interrogābat, et, ut iterārētur rēs, postulāvit. Igitur ego, rēgiīs gemmīs dē meō collō dētractīs, illīus super capite sustinēbam. Sēnsī hominem valdē movērī. Tum quaesīvit, quaenam foret illa ūna condiō? Respondeō:—Quoniam illī nōn essent filiī, postulāre mē, ut Gelavium prō suō filiō et prīncipātūs successōre adoptāret; et postquam ego cōram contiōne Cortopem meīs rēgālībus exōrnāssem, is rūsus Gelavium, prō suō filiō ac successōre prōnūntiātum, rēgiō aliquō mōre pūblicē agnōsceret. Libentissimē hanc condiōnem accēpit. 396. Tunc adhibitīs in colloquium Pachō ac Gelaviō, retegō quid āctum sit. Pachus laetātur, Gelavius obstupēscēns lacrimātur, interrogatque, numne abeam. Prōtenus explicō; hanc nāvem meōrum esse populārium et ad meam redīre patriam: oportēre

mē, patris senectūtem amanter fovēre; porrō hīc mē, sī maximē linguae Indicānae forem perītus, paucīs aliquot posse esse cārissimum, ūniversīs nōn posse esse acceptum grātumque prīncipem. Nōn mē paenitēre quod artem litterārum iīs per Gelavium trādiderim. Hanc sī excolant, filiōs fore patribus, nepōtēs filiīs usque sapientiōrēs. Sed opus meum hāc in īnsulā fīnītum esse.—Profundum subsequitur silentium. 397. Post paulisper Cortopem rogō, numquid obstat, quōminus rem illicō perficiāmus. Ille, quasi ēvigilāns, vacuīs oculīs aliquid respondet. Interpretantur: “Nihil quod sciam.” Tum Calefus in caespitem ēscendēns pauca prōclāmat, populum in contiōnem revocāns. Oppērīmur, dōnec quam plūrimī reveniant. Tum Cortopis manum tenēns, cum eō iterum ēscendō, cūctīs mīrantibus quid agātur. Prōtenus ego meō capite dētractam cristam Cortopis impōnō capiti, et monīle meum ē bullīs fulgentissimīs et versicolōribus collō ejusdem circumpōnō. Adstrepit plēbs gestiēns. Mox Pachus explicat, mē in honōrem Cortopis dē meō prīncipātū cēdere. Conclāmātur ab ūniversīs. Dēscendimus ego ac Pachus: Gelavium ēscendere jubeō. 398. Rūrsus Cortops palam nūntiat, sē pūblicē Gelavium prō suō filiō adoptāre, quem sē mortuō dēbeant prō prīncipe venerārī. Post haec dicta, ipsum illud monīle meum, suō collō dētractum, impōnit Gelaviō, quō manifēstior meīs sit oculīs ācta rēs. Applaudō. Tum Cortops Gelavi collō manūs suās circumdat, et paternum eī ōsculum imprimit. Dein brevissimum aliquid prōclāmat, quod mox mihi explicant: “Ēn vōbīs filiūs meus!” Mox maximā cum acclāmātiōne discēditur. Ōrō Cortopem, ut propter mea summa negōtia, sī illī id nōn sit incommodum, ad meum portum secundō māne veniat. Mox multā cum caerimōniā dēcēdentēs, domum scaphā petīvimus. Haec quārtō erant diē, post nāvis adventum. Eōdem sānē diē novus ille mālus per duo jūmenta ad nāvem ā Totopillō dēductus est.

---

## CAPUT (XIV.) QUĀRTUMDECIMUM.

399. Quīntō diē novus ille mālus suum in locum fīgitur. Ego autem quidquid volēbam asportāre, dēligēbam, compōnēbam,—laetāns, maerēns, gemēns, mīrē varius, et valdē taciturnus. Statuī autem mē ante quīntum finītum diem meās rēs omnēs cōfectūrum: atque cōfēcī. 400. Sextō diē pervēnit Cortops, sīc ut rogāveram. Pulcherrimum eī gladiōrum meōrum, quī erat ē chalybe caeruleō, atque ūnam novāculam cum cōticulā suā coriaceā, dōnō dō; item optimam ignipultam aucupāriam: dīcōque, sī artem jaculandī velit discere, posse ā Gelaviō docērī. Mox furcillam mēnsālem et cochlear, quae argentea habēbam, ut rēgiī jūris, dētulī. Instrūmentum meum fabrīle ac coquīnārium omne eī exhibuī, jussīque, sī quid praesertim vellet, inde dēligere. Nihil ille nisi ferream crātem, sartāginem<sup>[Y]</sup> et duās secūrēs dēlēgit. Serrās dīxit sē cūctās concupīscere; sed accipere,—id fore impudentis. Tum ego arrīdēns dīcō, quidquid cum Gelaviō relīquerim, ejus ūsum frūctumque penes Gelaviī patrem prīncipemque fore. Mox addidī, nescīre mē, quantī meam ille scapham aestimāret; Gelaviī et Totopillī operā fuisse exōrnātā; sed honōris causā, acciperet ā mē. Honōris (respondet) causā libentissimē sē accipere. Dēnique sēricam meam umbellam illī trādō, quoniam haec quoque rēgium quiddam habēre vidēbātur. Post prandium, ipsā in scaphā cum dōnīs meīs revertit, suam lintrem (pulchram illam quidem) concēdēns Gelaviō, sagittāsque Totopillō cum arcū splendidiōre. Equidem meīs omnibus sēdulō multa grātificābar, maribus ignipultās pistolāsque imprīmīs, honōris fortasse causā, item aliās rēs plūrēs; sed fēminīs quae darī oporteat, aliquantō difficilīus statuēbam.

401. Rērum seriē abreptus, clādem cymbae omīsī nārrāre. Upis, praeter aliās operās, in piscibus colligendīs condiendīsque erat ūtilis. Solēbat in cymbā rētia mea ipsō in portū vīsere, inde piscēs reportāns. Haec mulier cum Larī item nova fēcīt rētia, et vetera resarcīvit. Quōdam diē, quandō, rētī ēlātō, in eō erat ut piscēs extraheret, accipiter quīdam marīnus prō pisce certābat: id quod aliās ēvenīre nōveram; nam hominem hī ālitēs parum



formidābant. Ea surgēns, rēmō afflīxit ālitem; sed vī verberis oblīquē sē ē cymbā praecipitāvit. Forte plēnus tum maximē erat aestus, marī satis tumidō. Cymba, resorbente aestū, extrā asportātur, mox in scopulōs afflīgitur. Mulier ēnatāns facile terram attigit: cymbae nīl nisi tabulās quāsdam et ūnum rēmum recuperāvimus.

402. Totopillus, ut primum tempestās favet, trēs testūdinēs ope Gelaviī ac Pachī reportat. Hās cum plūrimīs cibīs vīvās ad nāvem ego cum Gelaviō, ipsius in lintre, convehō: ibi cum magistrō colloquor. Polliceor vīvōs haedōs pusillōs quattuor: dēmōnstrōque, sī amplius vellet pābulī, nautās posse ē valle metere. Antennās, ait ille, mālī etiam dēesse; rogatque anne possim frāctī mālī antennās probē affigere, cēterāsque rēs concinnāre: suōs enim nautās valdē esse inhabilēs, quōs ē Corrhagiā dūxisset. Crēdō posse mē operam cōficere; sed Dominicus diēs accēdēbat. Nē post discessum meum prōrsus negligērētur ille diēs, comperendināvi rem. “Diē Lūnārī (dīxī), sī poterō, perficiam; tum tū diē Mārtis nāvem fortasse solvēs.” Sē fore praestō, ait, sī ventus faveat.

403. Tum seorsum magistrō dīcō; quoniam fabrum nōn habeat, quidnī mē prō fabrō suō rediēns accipiat? Rīdet prīmō incrēdulus; sed quandō mē sērium videt, respondet, “Sit sānē, ut vīs. Sī opera tua fabrīlis nāvī suffēcerit, plēnam fabrī mercēdem ā sociīs meīs domī accipiēs. Servātae nāvis praemium tibi erit integrum. Prō cibīs quōs praebēs, pecūniam nōn numerābō quidem nunc, sed aestimābō.” 404. Tum quālēs habeat mercēs, interrogō. Ait sē ad Jamaicam portāre agricolendī instrūmentum, item vīlia servōrum vestīmenta, et quidquid colōniae sit idōneum. Num serrās habeat, num pālās, rogō. Maximē, ait. Tum ego decem serrās, decem pālās, quadrāgintā cultellōs plicātilēs, quadrāgintā vestēs ē gossypiō, et longī gossypīi quattuor fascēs, emō; novum dōnum Cortopī. Sīc propter oryāzam spērō ejus plēbī satis repēsum īrī. Mox varia cōficiō fēminīs nostrīs mūnuscula, aliqua virīs meīs, quae referre taedet: longē plūra sānē Gelaviō cōferō, inter quae duo pōnō dōlia pulveris nitrātī, quattuor missilis plumbī sacculōs. Hās rēs omnēs magister contrā mē in tabulam impēnsī refert, pollicēturque in cavernās meās dēportāre. 405. Crās, quī diēs erat Dominī, plūrimī convēnere, ut mē ultimum salūtārent. Multa dīxī benignē, sed moribundī hominis animum gerēbam. Multīs Gelavium monuī, ut quantum posset, nōn hīs tantum virīs, sed posterīs prōspiceret; nempe, sī seniōrum cōsiliō dē agrīs colendīs, dē ūsūfructū agrōrum ac maris, dē aedibus

condendīs, dē mātēriē saxī caementīque fruendā, lēgēs aequās firmāsque prōmulgāret. Dē tālibus rēbus prout lēgēs bonae exercentur, ita (dīxī) cīvītātis cujusque viget polletque status. Sī dē hīs quae Deus dōnāvit mortālībus aequē jūstēque inter hominēs statūtum sit, tum fore ut singulōrum industria vigeat, ūniversōrum cōpiae abundant; neque umquam ūberrimā in īnsulā dēfore prīncipī tūtāmenta majestātis, sī usque ad humillimum quemque cīvem dēscenderit prīncipis aequitās.—Ille mea verba quasi haurit atque recondit, rārō respondēns aut paucissima. Tandem ait (ignōscat mihi lēctor, quod referō,) “Ō ere, numquam ego voluī rēgnāre; sed sī antea nescīrem, in tē didicī quāenam essent rēgnātōris elementa.” 406. Postea dīxī: “Nae tū, quidquid ēvēnerit, id agās, ut numquam hāc in īnsulā duo sint inter sē līberī prīncipēs. Sī ad tempus id dēvītārī nequībit, at tū per foedus facitō ut filiī vestrī ac filiī omnium quī in eādē hāc erunt īnsulā, eōdem summō prīncipe ūtantur. Quam mītēs sītis inter vōs, tū optimē nōveris. Quam atrōx fūnestumque possit esse bellum, ego videō, quattuor illōs fortēsque requīrēns Cortopis filiōs. Tū in frātris jam locō es ergā Totopillum; cūr, quaesō, ācerrimī quondam crūdēlissimīque fuistis hostēs?” Lacrimā obortā, “Tū conciliāstī,” inquit. Dē sē nihil prōmittēbat.

407. Diē Lūnārī antennās resarcīvimus: tum fūnēs nautae ipsī ōrdinābant. Magister queritur, inter frūctūs nōn fuisse līmōnās, dē quā rē illicō imperābam. Mox Totopillus octo avēs vīvās dētulit, quīnque mortuās; ex hīs trēs grandēs erant; ōtidēs esse crēdidī. Dīxit habēre sē porcillōs quoque, crās fortasse alia dēlātūrum. 408. Ego ūnam acum polārem, ūnum pār pistolārum, bitubam meam, alteramque aucupāriam mēcūm eram āvectūrus; item quidquid proprium fuit Brazīlicī magistrī. Quidquid nēminī datum relinquerem, id omne prōnūntiō Gelaviī esse. Hunc porrō rogāvī, ut in mātris meae honōrem cocum illam in portū rigāret fovēretque.

409. Summō māne experrēctī, maximā cum expectātiōne multī mortālēs discurrimus. Totopillus mātūrē porcillōs vīvōs trēs dētulit, novamque avium cōpiam, inter quās columbī erant ē meīs vīvī. Sērius Fenis, Laris, Pachus fiscellam līmōnum suō quisque in capite dēportat. Mox ā Cortope nūntius rēmīgum operam pollicētur, sīquā forte opus sit. Sed propter ventum adversissimum et cautēs vadōsī maris parum nōtās, magister honōrificō respōnsō negat sē audēre hodiē ēgredī: id quod multum doleō. 410. Nam suspēnsīs intentisque animīs maestissimum est sēgnitia: item, parātīs rēbus omnibus, quid nōbīs nisi sēgnitia restat? Propterea, prōcēdente diē, juvābat

mē quod magister, plūrima interrogandō, multum ā mē sermōnem ēlicuit. Praecipuē mīrābātur, quō tandem fātō ego, Anglus homō, inter Lūsitanōs Brazīliēnsēs ineunte adolēscientiā fuerim colōnus, ubi ipsa religiō dēterret Anglōs. Ubi Gelavius quoque ōrāvit, ut tōtam hanc rem plēnius explicārem, in plēnā nautārum contiōne hanc tandem in modum locūtus sum. 411. Ego, in nāve Anglicā ad Guineam nāvigāns, ā Maurō pīrātā captus sum cum sociīs nostrīs nāvālibus. Is mē quattuor ferē annōs prō servulō labōrāre coēgit. Tandem fēlicī audāciā aufūgī, in phasēlō erī vėlōcissimō, ūnum puerum Maurum simul asportāns. Ipsō in Ōceanō nāve Lūsitanā exceptī sumus atque ad Brazīliam dēvectī. Magister negat sē prō naulō quidquam ā fugitīvō Chrīstiānō acceptūrum: prō phasēlō et rēbus omnibus quās asportāvī, ipse pollicētur pretium. Dēnique ab hōc virō līberālī, postquam in Omnium Sānctōrum Sinū ancoram jacimus, persolūta mihi est summa ducentārum vīgintī minārum Lūsitanārum. Hoc caput mihi erat pecūniae, in Brazīliam expositō. Fatendum autem est mē clam patre nāvigāsse; nōluisse mē idcircō sīc revertī in patriam, ut parentis opēs iners cōnsūmerem. 412. Illa sānē regiō, immēnsa agrōrum, profunda saltibus, vacua virōrum, advenās libentissimē excipit: nec diū exspectō, antequam apud colōnum quendam in agricultūram adhibear. Prīmō quidem propter linguam ignōtam parum eram ūtilis. Poteram sānē colentibus astāre, observāre, sēgnitiam cohibēre, et modicā quādam operā cibum tēctumque merērī, ut nē ex meō impendērem. Interim per eundem nāvis magistrum trānsigēbam, ut ex Angliā pecūniae quaedam meae ad mē mitterentur. Is nempe, Olisīpōnem reditūrus, crēdebat sē illīc posse id prōcūrāre, sī ego litterās sibi ad meārum pecūniārum sequestrem cōnfīderem; id quod libenter fēcī. (At fēmina habēbat nummōs meōs, vidua magistrī nāvis, prīmī meī atque optimī patrōnī.) Postea autem vir benignus, rē meā tamquam suā ipsīus accūrātius perpēnsā, ait nummīs nēquāquam opus esse; sed caput pecūniae, postquam dē summā certior venīret ab Angliā nūntius, Lūsitanā merce mūtandum, quālis praesertim Brazīliae esset idōnea. Posse mē post aliquod tempus Olisīpōnem ad sē scrībere, sīquid potissimum vellem: sīn minus, tum quaecumque sibi vidērentur, reportātūrum. Grātiās sānē ēgī, litterāsque ad amīcam viduam composuī, in quibus omnia, quae contigerant, strictim nārrābantur. Ea, postquam redditae sunt hae litterae, laeta effugiō meō, propter marītī suī memoriā Lūsitanum magistrum ex suō līberālīter dōnat, simul parentibus meis cūncta impertit. Comperīre nōn potuī, crēdō tamen, meās apud illam pecūniās ā patre cōnfestim auctās esse; nam merx quam

dēmum accēpī, aliquantō plūs erat quam quod aut exspectāveram aut potuī explicāre. Sed redeō unde dēflexī. 413. Colōnus ille (Araūjō eī erat nōmen) cujus in operis eram, agrī dītior erat quam pecūniae, nec potuit nātūrālī agrōrum ūbertāte ita fruī ut dēbēbat. Ager per servōs colitur. Atquī ille neque tot servōs, quot opus erant, habēbat, neque īnstrūmentum satis amplum, sī, propāgātā cultūrā, reditūs ac commercia opperīrētur. Ut industriū mē prīmō esse vīdit, agrīque colendī haud ignārum; mox, intellēxit nummōrum mē aliquantum manū tenēre, aliās exspectāre ab Angliā pecūniās: sēnsī eum familiārius mē compellāre, tum saepius astāre, velle colloquī, ad mēnsam interdum adhibēre. Mox puerīs uxōrīque mē commendat. Garriō cum puerīs, rūrī comes fīō; lūdum quasi gladiātōrium faciō,—nōn cum ipsō gladiō, nam virga prō tēlō erat,—dum doceō quōmodo Anglus nauta, quōmodo Maurus, feriat, arceat. Quae omnia nōn modo animum meum inter peregrīnōs valdē sōlābantur, sed propter linguae quoque ūsum prōderant. Lusitānicē loquī ex puerīs discō, cum patre sermōnēs „ipsīus dē rē, habeō artiōrēs. 414. Tandem is sē aperit. Benignē dē mē quaedam praefātus, ait,—Sī socium haud pauperem habēret, ambōbus lautius fore quam nunc sibi sōlī: tantam esse agrī ūbertātem, caelī tepōrem, aquārum abundantiam. Mē, sī in haereticā religiōne persistam, agrōs meō nōmine nōn posse in Brazīliā tenēre. Sānē sē velle, concordēs forent omnēs Chrīstiānī: sīn autem id fierī nōn possit, tum—idōneā factā syngraphā, quīn pecūniās in fundō ejus collocem, amplōsque reditūs fēnore accipiam?

415. Ubi cibus abundat et jūcunda āeris temperiēs facilī operā corpus fovet, ibi (opīnor) animī ad līberālītatem, apud nōs ad avāritiam, sunt prōpēnsiōrēs. Itaque colōnī illī sunt haud rārō sēgnēs, negligentēs, prōdigī; profectō nōn sunt illīberālēs. Quārē, quae in medium prōferēbat, cōmiter excutiēbam; neque abhorrēbam ā virō, vultū mōribusque jūxtā benignō. 416. Illud quoque cōnsīderābam; Lūsitāniam Angliae artiōre quōdam vinculō astringī, ex quō tempore formīdanda illa, ingēns potentiae Hispānia, nostra dīrissima atque implācābilis hostis, ē possēssiōne Lūsitāniae est exturbāta: quō tūtiōrēs mihi fore pecūniās, apud cīvem Lūsitānum collocātās. 417. Dēnique cōnsēnsī; scrīptīsque litterīs, quās mercēs ille dēsīderābat potissimum, hās ego Olisīpōne reportandās ad mē rogāvī. Pecūniās propter praesentēs ūsūs illicō poteram ex arcā meā cōnferre. Pacīscitur porrō, ut ego operās agrestēs cūrem regamque, ille praestet mihi ex ipsō fundō cibum, servōs, equōs, cūncta quae maximī sunt: cētera ex praesentī pecūniā atque ex annuō fēnore facile solvō. 418. Mīranda sēnē est

illā in regiōne arborum atque fruticum tum cōpia, tum prōcēritās. Plūrimārum nōmina arduum est dīcere: immō, prōrsus populīs Eurōpaeīs sunt incognita. Celebris est ibi mandioca ēsculenta, item milium atque zēa Indica, item banāna, et oryza satīva. Atquī ego, quī plūrima terrā nāscientiā apud Maurōs didiceram, tamen longē plūra hīc prīmō ignōta invēnī. 419. Noster quidem fundus saccharum praecipuē et tabācum gignēbat. Rādīcēs ēsculentās, olera, cereālia, ipsī in suīs agellīs servī ēducant, erōque praestant ūnus quisque aliquantum. Ille sēmina quaedam, īnstrūmenta, vestīmenta, tēcta domōrum cōnfert; cūncta administrat, dēfendit, rēgia vectīgālia persolvit. 420. Per biennium plūrima circā fundum erant novanda. Plūs aliquandō excolēbantur agrī. Saepēs, viae, portulae erant cōnficiendae: tum casulae novae, pluteī. Distribuendum īnstrūmentum, cultūra regenda, multa novē docenda. Irrigātiōne nōn opus erat; dumtaxat propter oryзам quibusdam in agellīs cohibēbantur rīvulī dēcurrentēs. Tertiō itidem annō multā opus erat alacritāte et perpēnsātiōne dīligentissimā, ut ad amussim iūdicārem quid sapienter, quid stultē impēsum; quae retinendae ratiōnēs, quae mūtandae forent. Necnōn, ipsōrum servōrum ingeniīs jam melius perspectīs, ad suās quemque cūrās frūctuōsius poteram dispōnere. Tantummodo nōn satis habēbāmus virōrum in operīs, quamquam vernulae quotannis nāscēbantur, et post aliquot annōs vidēbantur suffectūrī. 421. Attamen quārtō jam annō affluēbant opēs, servulī continuam officiōrum rotam persequēbantur. Socius (sīve collēga) ille meus Araūjō, vetus negōtiandī, externās fundī nostrī rēs dīligenter administrābat. Ego vērō quasi bracchiīs replicātīs poteram dītēscere, nisi quod propter novam hanc sēgnitiam tum maximē fundī, regiōnis, hominum, meīque ipsīus taedēbat mē.

422. Dēbēbam fortasse uxōrem dūcere, sed religiō locī impediēbat: nōn quod ego Anglicī cultūs tenāx fuerim atque ostentātor; nam extrā, vix dīversus ā cēterīs vidēbar. Sciēbam autem, ut prīmum mātirimōnium contemplārer, extemplō sacerdotēs dē meā religiōne fore cūriōsissimōs; dein artās connūbiī lēgēs postulātūrōs, quibus neque uxor sit mea ipsīus, neque liberī neque domus neque servī; sed sacerdos suā sponte intret, cognōscat, ōrđinet, imperitet; cūnctōs, sī libitum fuerit, contrā mē cohortētur. Id vērō nōn erat ferendum. Itaque sōlus manēbam, sōlum mē fovēbam, oblectābam: mox, mē ipsum perōsus, inquiētō agitābar animō.

423. Ita affectō subita supervenit vītāe conversiō, quam satis mīrārī nōn possum. Collēga ille sīve magister meus sēdulō mē ad sē vocat; ait, gravī dē rē velle sē colloquī; aurēs benignās et patientēs sē ōrāre. Ego, mīrābundus quid sit, respondeō, esse mihi ōtiī satis superque, et perlibenter mē auscultātūrum. 424. Tum īnfit: Opulentiōrem sē per mē in diēs fierī. Quidquid dīcat, nē sē putem ingrātum, nēve velle ab sē mē āmōtum. Multa mē fundō suō optimē fēcisse, ūnum nōn potuisse facere, ut plūrēs essent servulī. Id sī fieret, multō etiam perfectius lātiusque excolī posse agrōs. Operam meam per triennium ūtilem fuisse, immō necessāriam; jam ipsam per sē quasi cōnfectam: sīc enim mē rēs administrāsse, ut nōn jam indigērent meī. Nunc sī sibi suisque familiāribus cōsultum velim, in eō rēs esse ut valdē possim adjuvāre. 425. Hic pausam fēcit: ego autem expectāns etiam tacuī. Tum dē novō incipit: Audīsse sē ex mē, nāvigāsse mē ad Guineam commerciī caussā. Sī iterum vellem eōdem proficīscī, sibi amīcisque grātum fore, mihi ipsī fortasse nōn malum. Etenim plūrēs notāsse, mē, quī antea hilaris strēnuusque fuisset, nūper taciturnum ēvāsisse, maestum, languidum. Fortasse propter valētūdinem mūtandum āera. Excursiōnem maritimam corporī mentīque fore salūbrem. 426. Interrogantī mihi, Quid autem ego tibi tuisque circā Guineam sum prōfutūrus? respondet: Imprīmīs tū ratiōnem hujus commerciī atque idōneās mercēs intellegis, quās hinc oporteat exportāre: tum, (quod est māximum) servōs nigrītās, quōs volumus coemere, tū clēmenter regēs, sānōs dēportābis. Līberē tēcum dē tē loquar. Difficile est virum bonā familiā, hūmānē institūtum, benevolum, veterem reī maritimae, strēnuum negotiandō, regendī capācem reperīre, quī servitiā vēnālia conquīrat. Atquī vel maximē tālī virō hīc est opus. 427. Tū hominēs barbarōs benignē excipiēs, dēmulcēbis, ad obsequium dūcēs lēniter: aliī efferōs, contumācēs, trīstēs, vel languidōs, morbōsōs, sēmimortuōs important. Nōs tē volumus sine tuō impendiō īre. Manicipiā dē nostrō coemēs: dēportāta inter nōs dīvidēmus; tū parem nōbīs habēbis sortem. Porrō, quod nunc tibi propter operam tuam agrestem attribuō, id omne, pecūniā aestimātum, quamdiū in nāve sīs, solvam. 428. Nesciō an laus meī mē nōnnihil oblectāverit: cēterum respondeō, admīrāns sī per rēgium praefectum tālis expeditiō liceret: nam rēx jūs servitiōrum vēnditandōrum paucīs quibusdam propter magnam pecūniā concēdit. At ille: “Nihil nōs contrā rēgis ēdicta sumus factūrī. Palam nōn licet vēnditāre, at nōs prōrsus nōn vēndēmus. Et vērō, quo certius rēs sē habeat, mūneribus quibusdam sagāciter distribūtīs efficiāmus

ut nē nimia dē nāvis onere sit investigātiō. 429. Accēdit quod sacerdōtēs tāle inceptum vehementer comprobant. Barbarōs hominēs, quōrum vīta (lībera sit, an servīlis) saeva est, impia, foeda,—hōs in mānsuētum servitium sub benignitāte Chrīstiānā trādere, vērae ajunt esse pietātis. Jam nāvis parāta est; merx, quālem tū jubēbis, cito parābitur.”

430. Neque valdē placēbat mihi neque displicēbat haec expeditiō. Haud amplius juvenālī ārdōre in maria irruēbam, et tamen amābam mare atque ipsam operum commūtātiōnem. Condiōnēs vīdī aequās esse, rem lucrōsam, neque amīcōs hominēs rejicere facile fuit. Rē ponderātā, dēmum cōnsēnsī. Tum quasi intermortuus, sōlemnī testāmentō omnia conclūdō. Benignum illum nāvis magistrum, quī mē ex marī servāverat, hēredem īnstituō ex sēmisce. Alterum sēmissem rei meae ad Angliam remittendum dēstinō, cōnscribōque singillatim, quid opus factō sit. Sānē, sī, ut in testāmentō fuī prōvidus, sīc in vītā dīrigendā fuīsem sagāx, numquam tantās aerumnās exsul ab hominis genere forem perpessus.

431. Jamque parātīs rēbus omnibus, solvimus ā portū ipsīs Nōnīs, Augustō mēse. Prīmō ad septemtriōnēs nāvigāvimus, paene lītus Americae nostrae legentēs, tempestāte bonā, dumtaxat vehementer calidā, dōnec ad prōmontorium Augustīniānum dēvenimus. Inde ad Aquilōnēs versus, tamquam ad īnsulam Ferdinandī Nerōniānī dīrēximus cursum, citoque terram condidimus. Duodecimō diē turbō ventōrum ex Austrō conversus dētorquētur in Eurum, inde in Aquilōnem, violentiā semper augēscēns. 432. Nōs, multum contrā luctātī, necessariō tempestāte dēferimur. Ē sodāliciō ūnus vir febre victus dēcessit: mox nauta ac puer, superscandente flūctū, asportantur. Ut potuit magister, paulum dēcrēscēte ventō, caelum observāre, crēdidit nōs prope Septentriōnāle continentis lītus, circā Orinocōnis ōstia, dēvectōs. Nāvem negat Atlanticum mare trājiciendī jam esse compotem: igitur mē in cōnsilium adhibitō, rēctā domum redeundum cēnsēt. Id vērō vehementer nōlō; īnspectōque marī in chartīs dēscriptō, suādeō ut Barbādam petat, vītātō aestūs dēcursū, quī sinum Mēxicānum invehitur. 433. Ille cōnsēnsit nē redeat, clāvumque ita flectit, ut quī in aliquō Anglārum Antillium portū cupiat nāvem reficere. Hāc spē adductus, iterum nōs in altum committit: attamen novae procellae īnfortūnatam nāvem excipiunt. Dēnique, nē longus sim, multum reluctātī, in hās ipsās arēnās dēpellimur, ubi vestra nāvis afflīcta est. Sed nōs, scaphā cōnantēs effugere, salō maris obrutī sumus, unde ego sōlus ēvāsī vīvus. Cēterum nāvis ad

plēnilūnium dūrāvit incolumis, et praebuit mihi, nōn vīctum modo, sed paene īnsulae hujus imperium.

434. Tālia ubi dīxeram, multa inter sē colloquuntur, atque alia interrogant, quibus Gelavium respondēre jubeō: sīc variō sermōne finītus est diēs. Nocte mūtātur ventus. Prīmā lūce magister mihi aperit, rēmigēs nunc posse multum adjuvāre; dē quō prōtinus nūntium mīsī. Hōrā ante merīdiem decem cum ipsō Cortope vērē. Meī quoque omnēs congregābantur, inter quōs (ignōscat lēctor!) canem paene lacrimāns aspiciō. Hunc, illīs tam ūtilem, asportāre nōluī: illud dolēbam, quod fēminam canem nōn potuī simul dare, nē ipsum genus perīret. 435. Mox solvunt ancoram. Movētur nāvis cum aestū, remulcī applicantur, flūmen dēscendimus. Vōcibus, vultū, gestū, plēnīs cārītate, plēnīs item magnō maerōre, discēdimus. Ad caelum surgit cor meum, quaeritantis ecquandō eccubi hōsce tam fidēlēs, tam bonōs iterum conveniam. Gelavium oculī meī anquīrunt frūstrā: fortasse propter dolōrem sē occultābat. Ā terrā jam recēdēs, ēgregiam īnsulae pulchritūdinem admīror. Numquam sānē algae, fruticēta, praegrandēs arborēs, palmēta, collēs, aqua purpurea, caelum clārissimum, tam digna mihi antea vīsa sunt Paradīsō. Sīc rēmigēs nōs trahunt, quamdiū magistrō id tūtius vidērētur. 436. Ut prīmum in altō sumus et rīte concinnantur vēla, magister mihi significat ut dīmittam līntrēs. Tum videō Gelavium, locō Cortopis, iīs esse praefectum. Is properē nāvem scandit, gēna mea complectitur; et antea quam verba possim illō mōmentō digna fingere, recesserat, ēvāserat. Extemplō inter līntrēs ac nāvem magnum exstitit intervāllum. Dēscendō in cellam meam, animum variīs mōtibus distractum, pietāte, sī possim recollēctūrus.

437. Ad Caurum, quantum sineret ventus, semper contendebāmus. Postquam quadrāgintā ferē mīllia cursūs fēcimus, nāvis Eurōpaea appāret; mercātōria nāvis, ut crēdimus. Eam versus rēctā tendēs, magister cannōnēs opem precantēs personārī jubet. Mox per prōspeculā vēxillum vidēmus Anglicum. “Forsitan (inquit magister) illā citius in nāve quam in meā patriam attingās.” Id mē dubitātiōne conturbat. Postea ajō, sī maximē illa nāvis rēctā ad Angliam properet, praestat praemonēre parentēs, vīvere mē ac venīre. Dein meminī, quoniam prō fabrō operam locāssem meam, aequius esse, ut nē, nisi coāctus, pactum abrumperem; et quidquid reī pecūniāriae inter mē et magistrum pendēret, id benignius ā sociīs ejus aestimātum īrī, sī tunc nāvī adhaerērem. 438. Igitur properē litterās



cōnscrībō, quae ad patrem meum trāderentur, sī forte nāvis illa perferret. Quandō convenīmus, magister noster quaerit ab iīs, quānam in longitūdine terrestrī versēmur. Illī cōnfestim et longitūdinem et lātitudinem nōbīs prōnūntiant; ajunt porrō Angliam sē dīrēctā petere. Magister meās aliāsque ā sē litterās iīs trādit; mox inter utrōsque discēditur. 439. Jamaicam sine noxā attigimus: hīc fīnis mihi erat vagandī. Dīvēditā merce atque aliā merce assūptā, iterum solvimus, et minus quīnquāgintā diēbus in Bristoliae portū recondimur. Inde epistolam ad patrem scrībō, et tenerrimō respōnsō exhilaror. 440. Trānsāctīs festīnanter negotiīs, aliās litterās ad Brazīliam compōnō. Quidquid dē meā rē ex meō testāmentō fēcisset optimus et amīcissimus meus hērēs, crēdēns mē mortuum, id omne cōfirmō. Quidquid ex rē nāvis magistrī illīus, quī in naufragiō periit, apud mē teneō,—hōrologia, aurum Hispānum, aliaque,—haec et sī cujus aliūs rei pretium excēperim, spondeō reparāre. Omnēs ibi amīcōs salvēre jubeō. 441. Tum properō ad parentēs, portāns mēcum documenta illa fidēlium ministrōrum, rēgiam tegetem dorsuālem, praecīnctōrium, calceāmenta, item clāvam bellicam virī occīsī. Nec diū est, quum Eborācī ad cārissimōrum ac diū neglēctōrum pertingō sinum, senectūtī patris mātisque tenerā pietāte opitulātūrus.

---

## GLOSSARY.

- *Acus sarcināria, packing needle.*
- *Āmentum, a loop, thong with loop.*
- *Argilla vitreāria, glazier's putty.*
- *†Artillātor, the gunner of a ship.*
- *Aurea mālā, oranges.*
- *Batillum, coal shovel.*
- *Blatta, chafer or beetle.*
- *Capis, -idis, jug, mug, tankard.*
- *†Cannōn, -ōnis, a cannon.*
- *Cinchōna, Peruvian bark.*
- *Cochlear, -āre, a spoon.*
- *Cōnfībula, a clamp.*
- *Culter plicātilis, a clasp-knife.*
- *Cūpa natāns, a buoy.*
- *Cymba, a skiff.*
- *Dactylus, †Datta, a date (fruit).*
- *Diaeta, cabin of ship.*
- *†Dioscōrea, a yam.*

- Forceps, *pincers*.
  - Forfex, *shears, scissors*.
  - Fruticōs, *shrubs*.
  - Furcilla, *table fork*.
- 
- †Grallātōres, *wading birds*.
  - †Grossulārius, *gooseberry*.
- 
- Hasta cunīculāria, *miner's pike*.
  - Helcia, *traces*.
  - Hōrologium, *clock or watch*.
- 
- †Ignipulta, *a gun*.
  - Īnfula, *turban*.
- 
- Rēs Jaculātōria, *gunnery*.
- 
- Lōdīcās, *blankets*.
  - Lōrīca, *(ship's) parapet or bulwark*.
- 
- †Macacus, *monkey*.
  - Magis, -idis, *rolling pin*.
- 
- Ōtidēs, *bustards*.
- 
- Pessulum, *a bolt*.
  - Podium, *outjutting ledge, balcony*.

- Prōspeculum, *small telescope*.
  - †Pistola, *pistol*.
  - Pulvis nitrātus, *gunpowder*.
- 
- Riscus, *a rude box, a chest*.
  - Rubus, *bramble, as blackberry bush*.
  - Rutābulum, *coal rake*.
- 
- †Sagō, -ōnis, *sago*.
  - †Sāpō, -ōnis, *soap*.
  - †Saccharum, *sugar*.
  - Scapha, *ship's boat*.
  - Scrīnium, *dispatch box, desk*.
  - Sīnum, *a bowl*.
  - Stelliō, *small lizard*.
  - Sublica, *pile, stake, support*.
  - Sūbula, *bodkin*.
  - Succīdia, *a slice*.
  - Succulae, *a windlass?*
  - Sūdārium, *pocket handkerchief*.
  - Sufferciō, *I load (a gun)*.
  - Supparum, *topsail*.
- 
- Tībiālēs, *stockings*.
  - Tollēnō, *a crane for lifting*.
  - Traha, *a sledge; dimin. †Trahula*.

- Trochlea, *a pulley; dimin. Trochleola.*
- Tunica, *a shirt.*
- Vespertiliō, *a (flying) bat.*
- Zēa, *maize.*

[A] A crane,—with windlass.  
 [B] A buoy.  
 [C] The cabin.  
 [D] Windlass.  
 [E] Pulleys.  
 [F] Orange trees.  
 [G] He is looking southward.  
 [H] Stockings.  
 [I] A rolling pin.  
 [J] Shirt.  
 [K] Stockings.  
 [L] Monkey.  
 [M] Gooseberries.  
 [N] Bodkin.  
 [O] Select.  
 [P] Auger.  
 [Q] Cutter (chisel?)  
 [R] All but, *tantum non*.  
 [S] Thatch.  
 [T] Hood.  
 [U] A gutter.  
 [V] Glazier's putty.  
 [W] A Greek word: *Bustards*.  
 [X] Make lighter.  
 [Y] Frying Pan.

---

## **Edition notes**

This version of Rebilius Crūsō differs in a number of points from the version originally published and edited on the Project Gutenberg in its primary form. The work was published with the main goal of an easier learning of Latin, and in particular of vocabulary, at a time when the oral distinction of the length of vowels was not a major concern (neither were the phonemes themselves), because the language was mostly written. This means that the work was published indicating the vowel length only to distinguish ambiguous forms (even sometimes with anomalies), the reader having to rely on already knowing the word (which defeats the purpose of the book), look up a dictionary for every new word, or learn the word without worrying about vowel length. Nowadays, the teaching of Latin tends to focus more on pronunciation and vowel length, so that such older works lose much of their interest, and even display aberrant forms that shouldn't be considered as a reference. The solution is to provide a revised version that allows an easy access to vowel length, while adding some other fixes, such as follows:

- First the correction of a number of printing errors
- Next, the systematic distinction of long vowels from short ones using macrons. Ambiguous forms were left as short. As for neologisms, some research was done in order to get the best approximation. Some guesswork was done on coined proper names, with sobriety. And some rare words of which the origin is unknown, were mostly left untouched.
- Finally, the way in which the words are written is characteristic of New Latin, initially aiming to restore the purity of the language compared to Medieval Latin, but itself suffering from a spelling influenced by folk etymology or bad literary sources, thus disfiguring a certain number of words. Wherever such alterations have been spotted, they have been replaced in favor of the original most common

spelling. Among all these changes, only a few have an effect on the grammar, or the very nature of the word.

Please also note that the original version noted adverbs with a grave accent on the last vowel of the word, as well as some other small aids for reading. This is a typical habit of New Latin, and isn't in use anymore in more modern books, especially when macrons are used, so they were not kept in this version.

Fixed printing errors: (this list may be useful even for the original version)

- 25 sustentata > sustentatam
- 33 quator > quatuor
- 51 consuctudine > consuetudine
- 74 tanquem > tanquam
- 118 arcorali > ancorali
- 126 cos > eos
- 130 totu > tota
- 164 annulo lori > annulo loreo
- 180 pictatis > pietatis
- The missing number of section 192 was added
- 203 plautandis > plantandis
- 229 exsecro > exsecror
- 230 persequunter > persequuntur
- 231 duo > duos
- 239 duo > duos
- 256 humeros > humeris
- 273 quodem > quodam
- 304 colloquinur > colloquimur
- 314 coxisso > coxisse
- 341 recensito > recenso
- 345 erdebat > credebat
- 347 forenus > foremus
- 368 dicitis > dicis
- 382 cannonas > cannone
- 397 mirantibua > mirantibus
- 404 gossipii > gossypii

- 407 otidas > otides
- 410 procedento > procedente
- 420 excolebatur > excolebantur

Examples of spelling changes.

- confusion between oe, ae and ē (folk etymology and broken pronunciation)
- seorsim > seorsum (folk etymology/corruption)
- -mt- > -mpt- (excessive purism leading to unconventional forms)
- -nq- > -mq- [when it applies] (mostly New Latin spelling)
- indies > in dies (non-standard contraction)
- intelligo > intellego (less-standard spelling)
- delēgo > deligo (non-standard form that creates confusion)
- -mist- > -mixt- (rarer form)
- fasciculum > fasciculus (bad grammatical genre)
- cratibula > craticula (corruption)
- consīdeo > consīdo (as “sit down”, “settle”, the form consīdeo isn't standard)
- assis -is f (acc -im abl -i) > axis -is m (corrupt variant absent from most dictionaries)
- arctus > artus (folk etymology)
- nuncius > nuntius (corruption due to bad pronunciation)
- some changes from i to j
- and also double consonants changed to simple ones, and reciprocally



\*\*\* END OF THE PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK REBILIUS  
CR&#363;S&#333; : ROBINSON CRUSOE, IN LATIN; A BOOK TO  
LIGHTEN TEDIUM TO A LEARNER \*\*\*

Updated editions will replace the previous one—the old editions will be renamed.

Creating the works from print editions not protected by U.S. copyright law means that no one owns a United States copyright in these works, so the Foundation (and you!) can copy and distribute it in the United States without permission and without paying copyright royalties. Special rules, set forth in the General Terms of Use part of this license, apply to copying and distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works to protect the PROJECT GUTENBERG™ concept and trademark. Project Gutenberg is a registered trademark, and may not be used if you charge for an eBook, except by following the terms of the trademark license, including paying royalties for use of the Project Gutenberg trademark. If you do not charge anything for copies of this eBook, complying with the trademark license is very easy. You may use this eBook for nearly any purpose such as creation of derivative works, reports, performances and research. Project Gutenberg eBooks may be modified and printed and given away—you may do practically ANYTHING in the United States with eBooks not protected by U.S. copyright law. Redistribution is subject to the trademark license, especially commercial redistribution.

START: FULL LICENSE

---

## THE FULL PROJECT GUTENBERG LICENSE

PLEASE READ THIS BEFORE YOU DISTRIBUTE OR USE THIS WORK

To protect the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting the free distribution of electronic works, by using or distributing this work (or any other work associated in any way with the phrase “Project Gutenberg”), you agree to comply with all the terms of the Full Project Gutenberg™ License available with this file or online at [www.gutenberg.org/license](http://www.gutenberg.org/license).

## **Section 1. General Terms of Use and Redistributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works**

1.A. By reading or using any part of this Project Gutenberg™ electronic work, you indicate that you have read, understand, agree to and accept all the terms of this license and intellectual property (trademark/copyright) agreement. If you do not agree to abide by all the terms of this agreement, you must cease using and return or destroy all copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in your possession. If you paid a fee for obtaining a copy of or access to a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work and you do not agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement, you may obtain a refund from the person or entity to whom you paid the fee as set forth in paragraph 1.E.8.

1.B. “Project Gutenberg” is a registered trademark. It may only be used on or associated in any way with an electronic work by people who agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement. There are a few things that you can do with most Project Gutenberg™ electronic works even without complying with the full terms of this agreement. See paragraph 1.C below. There are a lot of things you can do with Project Gutenberg™ electronic works if you follow the terms of this agreement and help preserve free future access to Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. See paragraph 1.E below.

1.C. The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation (“the Foundation” or PGLAF), owns a compilation copyright in the collection of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. Nearly all the individual works in the collection are in the public domain in the United States. If an individual work is unprotected by copyright law in the United States and you are

located in the United States, we do not claim a right to prevent you from copying, distributing, performing, displaying or creating derivative works based on the work as long as all references to Project Gutenberg are removed. Of course, we hope that you will support the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting free access to electronic works by freely sharing Project Gutenberg™ works in compliance with the terms of this agreement for keeping the Project Gutenberg™ name associated with the work. You can easily comply with the terms of this agreement by keeping this work in the same format with its attached full Project Gutenberg™ License when you share it without charge with others.

1.D. The copyright laws of the place where you are located also govern what you can do with this work. Copyright laws in most countries are in a constant state of change. If you are outside the United States, check the laws of your country in addition to the terms of this agreement before downloading, copying, displaying, performing, distributing or creating derivative works based on this work or any other Project Gutenberg™ work. The Foundation makes no representations concerning the copyright status of any work in any country other than the United States.

1.E. Unless you have removed all references to Project Gutenberg:

1.E.1. The following sentence, with active links to, or other immediate access to, the full Project Gutenberg™ License must appear prominently whenever any copy of a Project Gutenberg™ work (any work on which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” appears, or with which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” is associated) is accessed, displayed, performed, viewed, copied or distributed:

This eBook is for the use of anyone anywhere in the United States and most other parts of the world at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this eBook or online at [www.gutenberg.org](http://www.gutenberg.org). If you are not located in the United States, you will have to check the laws of the country where you are located before using this eBook.

1.E.2. If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is derived from texts not protected by U.S. copyright law (does not contain a notice indicating that it is posted with permission of the copyright holder), the work can be copied and distributed to anyone in the United States without paying any fees or charges. If you are redistributing or providing access to a work with the phrase “Project Gutenberg” associated with or appearing on the work, you must comply either with the requirements of paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 or obtain permission for the use of the work and the Project Gutenberg™ trademark as set forth in paragraphs 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.3. If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is posted with the permission of the copyright holder, your use and distribution must comply with both paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 and any additional terms imposed by the copyright holder. Additional terms will be linked to the Project Gutenberg™ License for all works posted with the permission of the copyright holder found at the beginning of this work.

1.E.4. Do not unlink or detach or remove the full Project Gutenberg™ License terms from this work, or any files containing a part of this work or any other work associated with Project Gutenberg™.

1.E.5. Do not copy, display, perform, distribute or redistribute this electronic work, or any part of this electronic work, without prominently displaying the sentence set forth in paragraph 1.E.1 with active links or immediate access to the full terms of the Project Gutenberg™ License.

1.E.6. You may convert to and distribute this work in any binary, compressed, marked up, nonproprietary or proprietary form, including any word processing or hypertext form. However, if you provide access to or distribute copies of a Project Gutenberg™ work in a format other than “Plain Vanilla ASCII” or other format used in the official version posted on the official Project Gutenberg™ website ([www.gutenberg.org](http://www.gutenberg.org)), you must, at no additional cost, fee or expense to the user, provide a copy, a means of exporting a copy, or a means of obtaining a copy upon request, of the work in its original “Plain Vanilla ASCII” or other form. Any alternate format must include the full Project Gutenberg™ License as specified in paragraph 1.E.1.

1.E.7. Do not charge a fee for access to, viewing, displaying, performing, copying or distributing any Project Gutenberg™ works unless you comply with paragraph 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.8. You may charge a reasonable fee for copies of or providing access to or distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works provided that:

- You pay a royalty fee of 20% of the gross profits you derive from the use of Project Gutenberg™ works calculated using the method you already use to calculate your applicable taxes. The fee is owed to the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark, but he has agreed to donate royalties under this paragraph to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation. Royalty payments must be paid within 60 days following each date on which you prepare (or are legally required to prepare) your periodic tax returns. Royalty payments should be clearly marked as such and sent to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation at the address specified in Section 4, “Information about donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation.”
- You provide a full refund of any money paid by a user who notifies you in writing (or by e-mail) within 30 days of receipt that s/he does not agree to the terms of the full Project Gutenberg™ License. You must require such a user to return or destroy all copies of the works possessed in a physical medium and discontinue all use of and all access to other copies of Project Gutenberg™ works.
- You provide, in accordance with paragraph 1.F.3, a full refund of any money paid for a work or a replacement copy, if a defect in the electronic work is discovered and reported to you within 90 days of receipt of the work.
- You comply with all other terms of this agreement for free distribution of Project Gutenberg™ works.

1.E.9. If you wish to charge a fee or distribute a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work or group of works on different terms than are set forth in this agreement, you must obtain permission in writing from the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the manager of the Project

Gutenberg™ trademark. Contact the Foundation as set forth in Section 3 below.

## 1.F.

1.F.1. Project Gutenberg volunteers and employees expend considerable effort to identify, do copyright research on, transcribe and proofread works not protected by U.S. copyright law in creating the Project Gutenberg™ collection. Despite these efforts, Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, and the medium on which they may be stored, may contain “Defects,” such as, but not limited to, incomplete, inaccurate or corrupt data, transcription errors, a copyright or other intellectual property infringement, a defective or damaged disk or other medium, a computer virus, or computer codes that damage or cannot be read by your equipment.

1.F.2. LIMITED WARRANTY, DISCLAIMER OF DAMAGES - Except for the “Right of Replacement or Refund” described in paragraph 1.F.3, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark, and any other party distributing a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work under this agreement, disclaim all liability to you for damages, costs and expenses, including legal fees. YOU AGREE THAT YOU HAVE NO REMEDIES FOR NEGLIGENCE, STRICT LIABILITY, BREACH OF WARRANTY OR BREACH OF CONTRACT EXCEPT THOSE PROVIDED IN PARAGRAPH 1.F.3. YOU AGREE THAT THE FOUNDATION, THE TRADEMARK OWNER, AND ANY DISTRIBUTOR UNDER THIS AGREEMENT WILL NOT BE LIABLE TO YOU FOR ACTUAL, DIRECT, INDIRECT, CONSEQUENTIAL, PUNITIVE OR INCIDENTAL DAMAGES EVEN IF YOU GIVE NOTICE OF THE POSSIBILITY OF SUCH DAMAGE.

1.F.3. LIMITED RIGHT OF REPLACEMENT OR REFUND - If you discover a defect in this electronic work within 90 days of receiving it, you can receive a refund of the money (if any) you paid for it by sending a written explanation to the person you received the work from. If you received the work on a physical medium, you must return the medium with your written explanation. The person or entity that provided you with the defective work may elect to provide a replacement copy in lieu of a refund. If you received the work electronically, the person or entity providing it to

you may choose to give you a second opportunity to receive the work electronically in lieu of a refund. If the second copy is also defective, you may demand a refund in writing without further opportunities to fix the problem.

1.F.4. Except for the limited right of replacement or refund set forth in paragraph 1.F.3, this work is provided to you 'AS-IS', WITH NO OTHER WARRANTIES OF ANY KIND, EXPRESS OR IMPLIED, INCLUDING BUT NOT LIMITED TO WARRANTIES OF MERCHANTABILITY OR FITNESS FOR ANY PURPOSE.

1.F.5. Some states do not allow disclaimers of certain implied warranties or the exclusion or limitation of certain types of damages. If any disclaimer or limitation set forth in this agreement violates the law of the state applicable to this agreement, the agreement shall be interpreted to make the maximum disclaimer or limitation permitted by the applicable state law. The invalidity or unenforceability of any provision of this agreement shall not void the remaining provisions.

1.F.6. INDEMNITY - You agree to indemnify and hold the Foundation, the trademark owner, any agent or employee of the Foundation, anyone providing copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in accordance with this agreement, and any volunteers associated with the production, promotion and distribution of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, harmless from all liability, costs and expenses, including legal fees, that arise directly or indirectly from any of the following which you do or cause to occur: (a) distribution of this or any Project Gutenberg™ work, (b) alteration, modification, or additions or deletions to any Project Gutenberg™ work, and (c) any Defect you cause.

## **Section 2. Information about the Mission of Project Gutenberg™**

Project Gutenberg™ is synonymous with the free distribution of electronic works in formats readable by the widest variety of computers including obsolete, old, middle-aged and new computers. It exists because of the



efforts of hundreds of volunteers and donations from people in all walks of life.

Volunteers and financial support to provide volunteers with the assistance they need are critical to reaching Project Gutenberg™'s goals and ensuring that the Project Gutenberg™ collection will remain freely available for generations to come. In 2001, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation was created to provide a secure and permanent future for Project Gutenberg™ and future generations. To learn more about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation and how your efforts and donations can help, see Sections 3 and 4 and the Foundation information page at [www.gutenberg.org](http://www.gutenberg.org).

### **Section 3. Information about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation**

The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation is a non-profit 501(c)(3) educational corporation organized under the laws of the state of Mississippi and granted tax exempt status by the Internal Revenue Service. The Foundation's EIN or federal tax identification number is 64-6221541. Contributions to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation are tax deductible to the full extent permitted by U.S. federal laws and your state's laws.

The Foundation's business office is located at 809 North 1500 West, Salt Lake City, UT 84116, (801) 596-1887. Email contact links and up to date contact information can be found at the Foundation's website and official page at [www.gutenberg.org/contact](http://www.gutenberg.org/contact)

### **Section 4. Information about Donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation**

Project Gutenberg™ depends upon and cannot survive without widespread public support and donations to carry out its mission of increasing the number of public domain and licensed works that can be freely distributed in machine-readable form accessible by the widest array of equipment

including outdated equipment. Many small donations (\$1 to \$5,000) are particularly important to maintaining tax exempt status with the IRS.

The Foundation is committed to complying with the laws regulating charities and charitable donations in all 50 states of the United States. Compliance requirements are not uniform and it takes a considerable effort, much paperwork and many fees to meet and keep up with these requirements. We do not solicit donations in locations where we have not received written confirmation of compliance. To SEND DONATIONS or determine the status of compliance for any particular state visit [www.gutenberg.org/donate](http://www.gutenberg.org/donate).

While we cannot and do not solicit contributions from states where we have not met the solicitation requirements, we know of no prohibition against accepting unsolicited donations from donors in such states who approach us with offers to donate.

International donations are gratefully accepted, but we cannot make any statements concerning tax treatment of donations received from outside the United States. U.S. laws alone swamp our small staff.

Please check the Project Gutenberg web pages for current donation methods and addresses. Donations are accepted in a number of other ways including checks, online payments and credit card donations. To donate, please visit: [www.gutenberg.org/donate](http://www.gutenberg.org/donate)

## **Section 5. General Information About Project Gutenberg™ electronic works**

Professor Michael S. Hart was the originator of the Project Gutenberg™ concept of a library of electronic works that could be freely shared with anyone. For forty years, he produced and distributed Project Gutenberg™ eBooks with only a loose network of volunteer support.

Project Gutenberg™ eBooks are often created from several printed editions, all of which are confirmed as not protected by copyright in the U.S. unless a

copyright notice is included. Thus, we do not necessarily keep eBooks in compliance with any particular paper edition.

Most people start at our website which has the main PG search facility:  
[www.gutenberg.org](http://www.gutenberg.org).

This website includes information about Project Gutenberg™, including how to make donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, how to help produce our new eBooks, and how to subscribe to our email newsletter to hear about new eBooks.